ETERNAL RULE

BOOK 1
MIDDLE WHITE

BY THE WORKER

Copyright © 2023 [The Worker]

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, distributed, or transmitted in any form or by any means, including photocopying, recording, or other electronic or mechanical methods, without the prior written permission of the publisher, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual events or locales or persons, living or dead, is entirely coincidental.

ISBN: [9798865031895]
Cover design by [Canva]
Published by [The Worker]

For
All
Workers

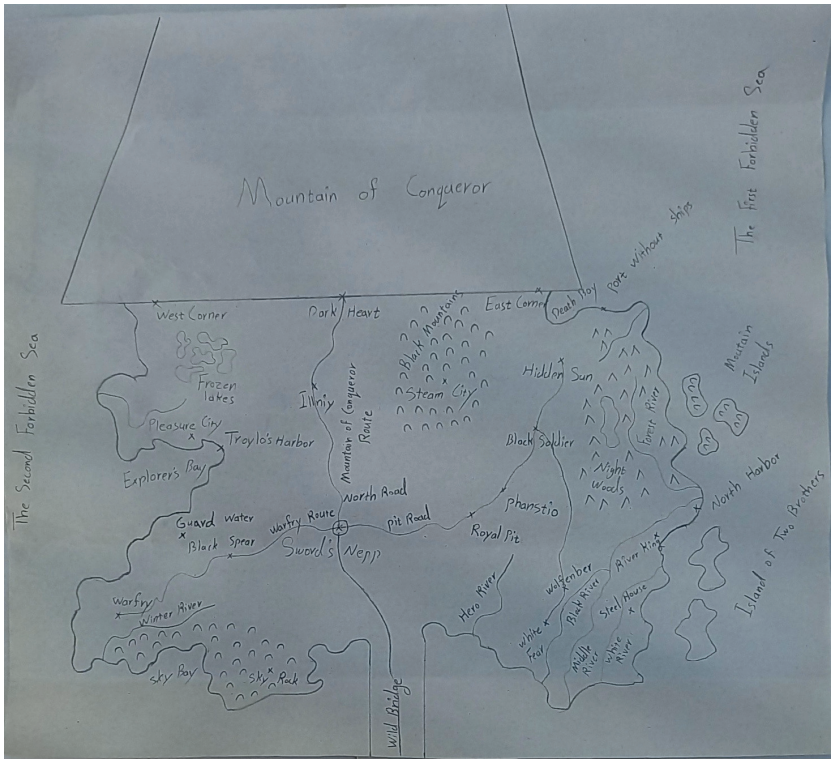
Contents

Map	1
The Final Day	4
For the Final Day	6
Book 1	7
Chapter 0	8
Chapter 1	27
Chapter 2	51
Chapter 3	65
Chapter 4	80
Chapter 5	95
Chapter 6	115
Chapter 7	130
Chapter 8	150
Chapter 9	169
Chapter 10	188
Chapter 11	210
Chapter 12	227
Chapter 13	243
Chapter 14	260
Chapter 15	276
Chapter 16	296
Chapter 17	317

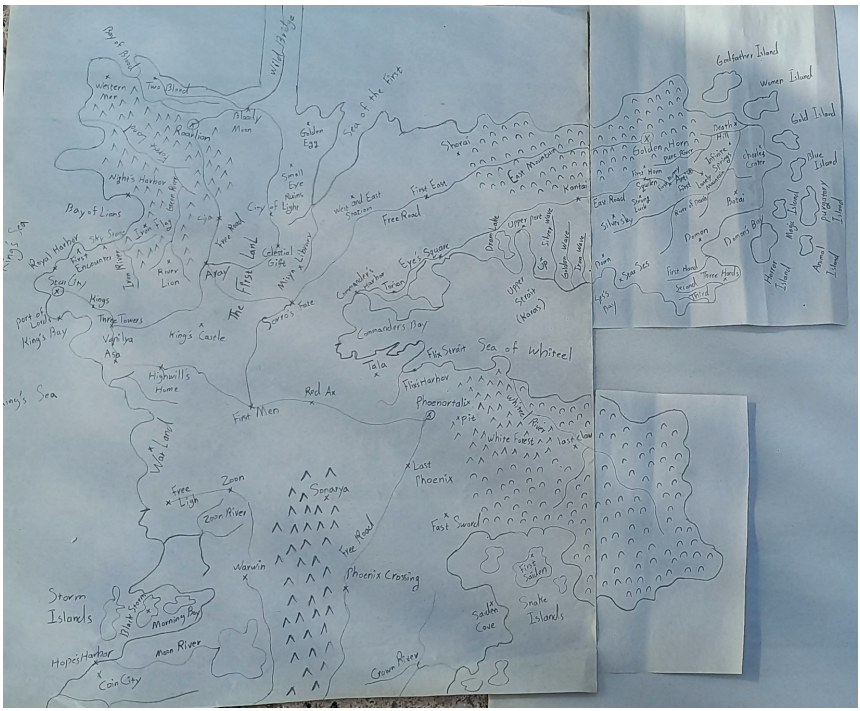
Chapter 18 337
Chapter 19 357
Chapter 20 374
Chapter 21 388
Chapter 22 405
Chapter 23 421
Chapter 24 437
Chapter 25 450
Chapter Final 474
The Ice Age I 491
The Ice Age II 499
The Ice Age III 513
House Highwill 519
House Ritanion 543
House Tarais 549
House Azberns 556
House Evengers 562
House Retigan 564
House Sysaiden 567
House Talesky 570
House Mummy 573
House Rking 577

House Stone 587
The Third Son 593
The First Son 597
Calendar 599
Book 2 626
Future 627
Story 628
Contact 629
Eternal Rule 630

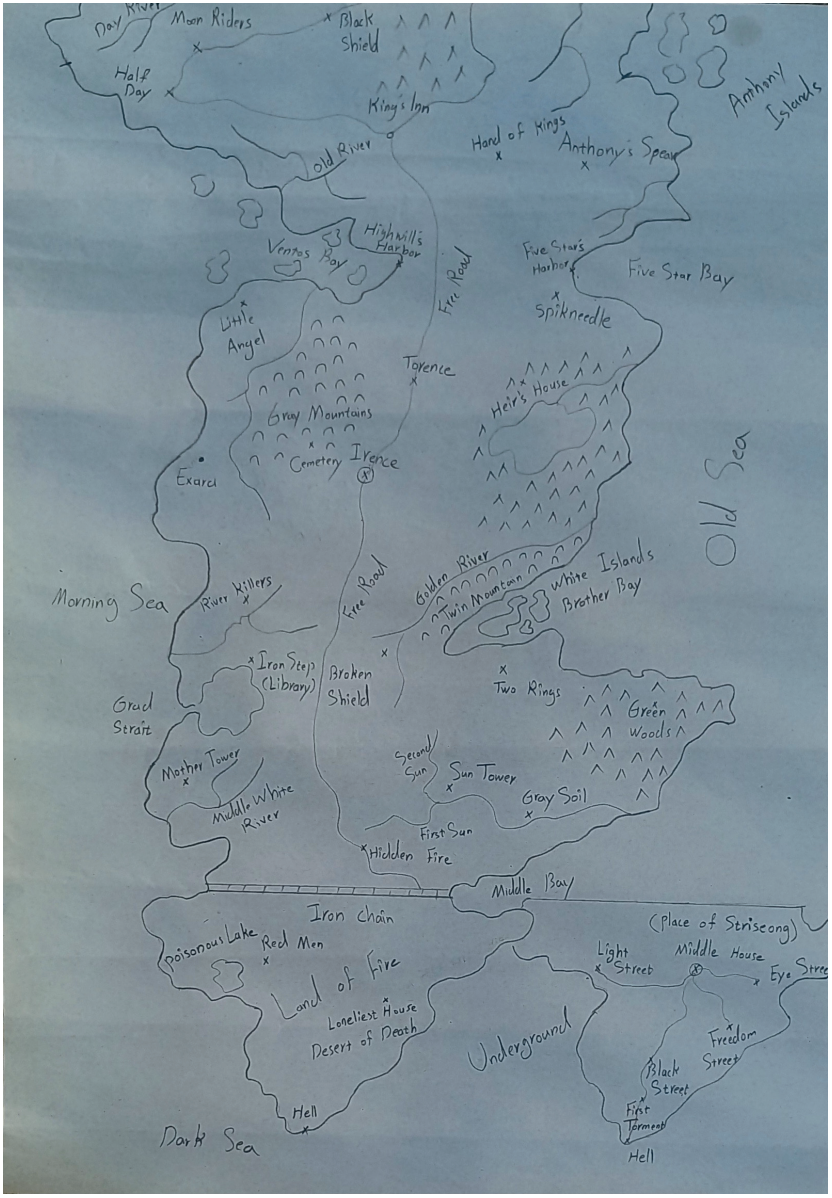
NORTH


Mountain of Conqueror
West Corner
Dark Heart
East Corner
Death Bay
Port without Ships
The First Forbidden Sea
The Second Forbidden Sea
Frozen lakes
Illinix
Mountain of Conqueror Route
Black Mountains
Steam City
Hidden Sun
Mountain Islands
Pleasure City
Troylo's Harbor
Explorer's Bay
Black Soldier
Inner River
Night Woods
North Road
Guard water
warfry Route
pit Road
Black Spear
Sword's Nest
Phansio
Royal Pit
North Harbor
Island of Two Brothers
warfry
Winter River
Hero River
wolfember
Black River
River Mist
Steel House
white Fall
Middle River
White River
sky Bay
Sky Rock
wild Bridge

HALLSTREET


Bay of Plenty
Two Plains
Western Mere
Plenty Moon
Golden Egg
Sea of the Fire
Sterai
Nights Harbor
Bay of Lions
Small Eye Ruins
City of Light
Fire Road
First Land
Celestial Gift
Ruins of Ulmeric
Free Road
Fine East
East Mountains
Kantai
Upper Mere
Sky Mere
Golden Horn
Mere Ruins
Deathly Hill
Goatfather Island
Women Island
Gold Island
Blue Island
Charles Crater
Pilgrimage Island
Royal Harbor
Sky Stone
Sea Reed
Silas's Sky
Dawn
Dawn's Bay
Batai
Mage Island
Horror Island
Angel Island
Sean City
Ruins Lion
Aray
Kings Bay
Three Towers
Kings Castle
Vajisha
Asp
Highwills Home
Sorias Gate
Commanders Bay
Tela
Fish Strait
Sea of Whiteel
Fish Harbor
Phoenortalis
Pie
White Forest
Last Phoenix
Red Ax
Fine Men
Wall Land
Free Light
Zoon
Zoon River
Sonarya
Free Road
Warwin
Phoenix Crossing
Fast Sword
First Golden
Snake Islands
Golden Cove
Storm Islands
Black Sand
Morning Bay
Hopes Harbor
Moon River
Coin City
Crown River

VENTOS


Moon Riders
Black Shield
Half Day
King's Inn
Hand of Kings
Anthony's Spear
Anthony Islands
Old River
Ventos Bay
High Hill's Harbor
Free Road
Five Star's Harbor
Five Star Bay
Spikneedle
Little Angel
Torence
Gray Mountains
Cemetery
Irence
Heir's House
Old Sea
Exarch
Golden River
Twin Mountains
White Islands
Brother Bay
Morning Sea
River Killers
Free Road
Iron Steps (Library)
Broken Shield
Two Rings
Green Woods
Grad Strait
Mother Tower
Middle White River
Second Sun
Sun Tower
Gray Soil
First Sun
Hidden Fire
Middle Bay
Iron Chain
(Place of Striseong)
Poisonous Lake
Red Men
Land of Fire
Loneliest House
Desert of Death
Underground
Light Street
Middle House
Eye Street
Freedom Street
Black Street
First Terrace
Hell
Hell
Dark Sea

The Final Day

The first heir defines the final day in a way that the final day will occur in seven nights-white-days.

- **On the first day**

The darkness of the middle white begins to darken the world from four sides. No heavenly light, including the sun, stars, moonlight, and the middle white, will be lit, and no earthly fire will be lit either. The whole world will be plunged into deep darkness in one night-white-day.

- **Second to fourth day**

The middle white comes to the sky on the second day. The ice rain starts a second after the middle white comes. Small ice falls on the ground at a gentle speed, which melts after reaching the ground and goes to the lower layers of the earth.

- **5th to 7th day**

The ice that comes from the sky starts to get bigger and the speed of hitting the ground increases. In the same way that on the last day, large ice cubes will hit the ground very quickly and destroy everything. On the seventh day and at the last moment, the biggest event in the world happens.

Thousands of prophecies have been made for the final day, and the greatest prophecy is that thousands of prophecies will come true.

For the Final Day

- **The first heir, called the first man**

We will return at the final day.

- **Olyns the Conqueror**

The final day that I have seen, no one will survive, but the final day that the last heir sees, they will survive.

- **Daitrios Ritanion**

If the final day happened in our time, we would not be able to survive.

- **Aremlyn Midnyter**

I am the final day.

Book 1

- **Norris Ritanion_ King's Sword**

At the final day, the last person to sit on the Infinity throne will live.

- **John Highwill_ called the last Highwill**

At the final day, the real enemy will show his face, and when he comes, he will not be alone.

- **Richard Azberns_ called the old King**

The only thing that will save us in the final day is Eternal rule.

Chapter 0
This is the Final day

Gavin didn't feel good about going to the land in front of them. He would slowly dip the oar into the water and moved it. The boat was going forward three or four inches. He paddled slowly to delay the arrival in the land to think a little bit more about the land. The further the boat went, the colder and thicker the air became. His body felt the summer cold. This feeling gradually turned into fear and worry as the boat reached land. This kind of cold was unprecedented or never happened in the early summer months, even at night! The weather had turned from warm to cold. This surprised Gavin. He had heard the rumors by the word of mouth from ancient people. According to the word of the ancient people, the final day in other lands will arrive

earlier than the other places. But Gavin knew that it was still a long time before the final day would come and the ice would fall from the sky. Why should it come to the other land earlier than its time? But what is the difference? If the final day comes, it will be the same for everyone all around the world. With these thoughts, he instilled in himself that the final day would come later. It means that the human would become extinct in a few years. Sometimes this issue was important to him and sometimes not. When he thought to himself a lot, he concluded that everything has an ending; Like all the creatures of the first and second ice ages. And humans must reach their end one day as well. But one thing always bothered him. Why does it have to happen in my time? I can't see my children growing up or myself becoming a grandfather. Gavin was knighted for about three years. He was a short man, but he had a large body. He had keen eyes like an eagle that could see a person's face from a long distance. He always trimmed his face and kept it clean. Gavin was one of the knights guarding the castle. Gavin had a very difficult childhood and faced many

hardships and problems in his life. He had lost his mother due to illness after his birth and had grown up without a mother's love. Gavin turned to Commander Ardell. "Are you sure?" He asked.
"If I wasn't sure, we wouldn't be here now, aren't you scared, boy?" said Ardell, the grumpy old man sitting across from him.
“Fear! I have had nothing to do with fear for a long time. I just want to avoid the possibility of something irreparable." Gavin snickered.
"Play with words all you want, but it doesn't show that you're not scared," Ardell told him with the sting of laughter that Gavin had handed him.”When you didn't learn to speak yet, that is, during the revolution, it was my worst time. It had reached a point where fathers did not trust their sons or sons did not trust their fathers. At the time of the revolution, it was rumored that when the last Highwill died, the Mountain of the conqueror would collapse and the two-faced-walkers would destroy the whole world before the final day. When the cruel king Iryn Highwill killed his son, he was informed that his grandson was also dead. Upon hearing this news, he

committed suicide and died as the last Highwill. People used to believe that when he dies, the world would also die, but it didn't. The effects he left behind after his suicide caused chaos to in all five kingdoms. When the child you raised with your own hands wants to draw a sword against you one day, this is called fear! The real fear!"

Ardell was considered the oldest person in the ship and the most experienced among them. His children and his wife were killed during the revolution by crazy people who took advantage of the country's poor situation. Everyone was doing everything they could. The mercenaries set fire to the fields and heralded the arrival of the two-faced-walkers. There was no law or punishment for their dirty deeds; because there was no king to punish them according to the law.

Anarchy ruled during the revolution which was a dark period of history. His beard turned white. In his youth, he was a skilled warrior, but over the years the sword had become heavy in his hand and it had become difficult for him to hold it. "Finn, go and switch places with Sir Gavin. Sir Gavin is tired and tiredness makes him talk

nonsense." Ardell said to young Finn, who had just joined their ship.
"Yes, Commander."
Finn switched places with Gavin. Finn's eyes saw the starry sky with the silvery moon. His ears could hear the sound of the oar hitting the water. His nose smelled the scent that was in the air. His inner feelings were adventurous and his mind was curious. Finn, who had volunteered for this mission, wanted to go to the land in front of them after the last island that he had miraculously passed with the prince. His leg, which had been twisted during the escape and the bones had been displaced, was set in place by one of the ship's men, who was a skilled person. Finn was working at a blacksmith shop before joining the prince and going to the last island and their adventures, and even before he traveled by ship. When he tried to shape hundreds of faded swords, he could never shape even one into its original form. The blacksmith encouraged him to try harder. Finn finally managed to make a sword after his nigh-white-day efforts. The blacksmith smiled at him as he took the sword in his hand, which turned

into bitterness as the sword shattered into a thousand pieces. Finn realized that he has no talent in making swords; So he started working inside the ship; With the wish to become the captain of his own ship one day. The boat come into the land. It seemed to old Ardell that the land was a remote island or something like that, but the reality was beyond that.

"We're finally here," Gavin said with a glint in her eyes.

Gavin got off the boat with a sword in his hand and a dagger strapped to his waist, Ardell with two steel axes in both hands, and Finn with a bow and arrow on his back. They came to the shore. The land was as bright as day and they did not need a torch. "We have to separate," Ardell said. "You two stay together, I'll go alone."

He handed Gavin a small trumpet and continued, “If something happens, you can use this trumpet to signal me. Be very careful when using this. You use it when you have to. To blow the trumpet, you have to blow three times slowly, then you hit it with your hand and blow again until the trumpet sounds. The sound of the

trumpet is so loud that it can reach a long distance. If you hear my trumpet sound, you will run to the boat, understand?”
"Yes, Commander." They both answered.
"Alright, boys, let's go searching." said Ardell.
Ardell went to the north. It didn't take long before he disappeared in the white cold that covered his clothes. Finn and Gavin set off westward. With every step they took, the atmosphere around them became more different. The ground was white like the middle white that appeared between day and night. The dark sky had disappeared, and the white cold surrounded the sky and the ground. After a long walk, Gavin noticed something. "Finn, look behind you. Footprints are disappearing. We can't find the way back. I think we are lost."
"What do we do now?" Finn said sadly.
"We must continue on our way forward," Gavin replied with doubt in his eyes.
"How far?" Finn asked.
"I don't know, we just have to move on," Gavin said.
Gavin drew the sword from its scabbard, Finn

took the bow from his back and put the arrow on the string to fire. They were preparing themselves for the unexpected. It was getting colder. A strong wind was blowing at them from all four directions. They had no power to walk forward. They could not take the next step. Not backwards, not forwards, not in any other direction. They were stuck in the middle of nowhere. They couldn't move anymore. The cold had kept them in a spot; like a rabbit that fell into a trap and could not move, but with the difference that their trap was free from all sides and they only had no power to move. "We must wait here until the cold and the strong wind abate before we can move forward," said Gavin.

Finn was struggling to move. "I can not. I am very cold, very cold. I can't bear it, not even one more moment. My whole body is cold. My fingers can no longer hold the bow."

Finn's fingers were frozen. The bow and the arrow slipped from his frozen fingers and fell to the ground. He also removed the sling that weighed on his back and threw it on the ground. The moment that quiver of arrows fall to the

ground, Finn felt he could move forward. No power could stop him from moving. Gavin was still standing in the same position, struggling to move forward. Gavin's eyes widened as he saw Finn able to walk easily with no cold coming his way. "Put down your weapon, this is the cold warning," Finn told him. "No weapon can stop him."

Gavin dropped his sword, but he was still standing in the same position. "You must drop all weapons!" Finn insisted.

Gavin pulled the dagger from his waist and dropped it next to his sword. There was no longer any power to hold him. He was released like Finn; like the cold had allowed him to move after dropping his weapons. "I can't believe it. What the hell did we get into? Dropping our weapons was the most stupid thing that we ever did."

"At least we can move with this," said Finn, "think about that part."

After the cold, they continued their way at night and left the cold behind. In the daylight, the white cold had disappeared. The golden sunlight showed the ground under Gavin's feet well. The

ground was like a frozen lake, walking on it was like walking on dirt ground; with the difference that it was pure white without any scratches or lines on it. After sunrise, which was an hour later, they reached a wall. The entire wall was white and obviously made of ice. Finn looked at the top of the wall. As far as the eye could see, it was just a wall. Its height could not be determined until the top. Gavin surveyed the extent of the wall. The wall was stretched to the end of the world on both sides. Finn got closer to the wall . He was about to touch it when Gavin grabbed his hand.
"What do you think you're doing?"
"I'm touching it." Finn said.
"Why?"
"I don't know, I just want to touch it," Finn said easily.
"Did you forget what the cold did to us? Everything is strange here. Instead of touching the wall, go look for the entrance so we can get through this damn wall, wouldn't that be better?"
"Okay," Finn said.
Finn left Gavin and each of them went to a side of the wall. Finn stopped when he was far away from

Gavin. His sense of curiosity did not let him go. He took out the leather gloves made of mouse skin. He put his hand close to the wall. When he touched the ice wall, the ice wall turned into snowflakes in an instant. Heavy snow began to fall. "Finn, what the hell did you do? I told you not to do anything stupid. We survived the cold, now the snow has fallen. Where should we go now in this heavy snow?"

Small and big balls of snow were falling from the sky in a very high speed. Gavin barely makes it to Finn. In a few minutes, the ground was covered with snow. Walking among the snows that came from the sky was like walking through a swamp, which pulled a person down. It was very close to Gavin reaches Finn. "Finn just run fast." Gavin said. "Move your body so that we don't get caught in this damn snow."

As Gavin caught up with Finn, they both ran forward with the maximum speed their legs could go. This was Finn's second escape. He hoped that his leg wouldn't twist again and he wouldn't fall, because there was no way to get up. As they went forward, there was still snow. To the right, to the

left, to the back, it is still snowing heavily. Such snow had not been seen in the previous winters. The worst winter they had experienced was four years ago. The snow had come up to their legs, during a tweek that was falling little by little, but now the situation was different; like if all the winters in the last five years combined, it wouldn't snow that much! The snow was almost up to their chests. They had stopped moving. "We're going to die," Finn said. "The frost and final day are here. Maybe it's not ice, but snow has nothing less of ice. Sooner or later we will die under this snow. It just depends on how long it takes.

"If you didn't touch the goddamn wall with your goddamn hand, we wouldn't be trapped in this goddamn snow right now." Gavin said angrily. "And we didn't spend the last moments of our goddamn lives together."

Gavin saw all the bitter and sweet memories of his life in the moments that were considered the last ones for him. The day he came to the capital for the first time with his father to see the beautiful Skyglass, the always crowded streets of the city,

the peddlers who begged people to buy their stuffs and changed their location every day because of the fear of the city guards. In his opinion, the capital city had the smoothest roads without any ups and downs. The cart and the passenger carriages moved without any sound, without any sound! Gavin remembered the trumpet that Ardell had given him. “Finn... Finn... Damn you. The trumpet that Ardell gave us to use, maybe it can do something! How did it work? I forgot."

The snow was up to Finn's chin and it still didn't cover his mouth. "You have to blow into it three times first, then you gently tap it with your hand final blow again." Do it quickly." He quickly explained.

Gavin moved his hands through the snow and took the trumpet out of his pocket in hurry. He did everything Finn said. He reached the last level when the snow completely covered his head. Finn and Gavin were completely covered in snow. The trumpet was the still left in Gavin’s mouth for the final blow. Snow was falling on it and preventing it from blowing. Gavin knew that this was his last

chance to survive, so he did her best and raised his head a little. The trumpet rose from under the snow in a knuckle size. Gavin blew with all his power. A sound came out of the trumpet that immediately turned the snow on the ground into the wind and they were released for the second time. They looked at the sky and thought about how their day would end. "What now?" Finn said breathlessly. "Did Ardell hear our trumpet? Does it mean that the sound of the trumpet made us destroy the snow? The sky is clear, what to do now? Which way should we go? There is no way back and no way forward."

Gavin got up. "I don't know how to get out of here. Ardell must have been in the same situation like us, God knows that was he lucky to save himself or not. We will wait here for a while to see what will happen. I don't want you to break any walls anymore."

They lay down on the white floor and slept for a few hours to forget the nightmares they had seen when they were awake. Sleep tasted like sweet fruit for them and they didn't want to wake up; So that they were drowned in sleep and dreams

forever and awakening would not come to them again, except with a warning! A loud sound of a trumpet was coming from far away; it was like an arrow in their dream that suddenly woke them up. "It's Ardell!" Finn said. "We have to go."
They both jumped up and ran after the sound. “Was the sound coming from that direction?” Gavin asked.
Finn stopped, thought for a moment. "I don't know, I just heard. It could be heard from all four directions. Do you think Ardell also faced the ice wall? "Finn said.
"I don’t know. When I was asleep, my mind was focused on the final day and I had strange dreams. Were you like that too?" Gavin said.
Finn, horrified by Gavin’s words, nodded in agreement. "How will the final day happen?" asked Gavin.
With a look of fear on his face, Finn spoke the words in a special tune: "The final Day and the glacial will happen in the seven nigh-white-day. On the first day, the darkness... "
Finn was interrupted. The view in front of him was getting dark. Darkness started from the front

and passed over their heads and went as far as the world existed. The whole world fell into darkness without any light. Finn and Gavin swallowed their saliva in the darkness they were in, and prayed that this darkness would not last longer than usual, because if it did, it would be obvious that the final day had begun! Finn was whispering sentences. Fortunately, like the previous days, the darkness of middle white lasted as long as it should, preparing the sky for the middle white dawn. The middle white, the third light of the sky, rose after the darkness.

It made the sky and earth whiter than ever. "It's the middle white," Finn said. "On the first day when the darkness of middle white plunges the whole world into darkness, the sun, the moon, the stars in the sky and the torches on earth will be extinguished in the nigh-white-day. On the second day, the middle white comes to the sky. The sky prepares itself for its third rain, which means the coming of ice... "

A terrifying sound was heard from the sky. It was like lightning, but more terrifying! "That's not the sound of the trumpet!" said Gavin.

They looked at the sky. The strange thing that Finn had talked about came true. It was definitely ice! On this day! The ices were in the size of small snowflakes but with a sharp tip, which looked like an icicle, fell from the sky gently and at a slow speed. It made a scary scene. The ice gradually changed in size and began to be bigger, and the speed of that increased. "This is not the final day." Finn said. "It's not possible at all. Maybe we are in a similar dream, ha!"

Gavin was scared. He saw the ice getting bigger and bigger. "This is not the cold to pass through by giving the gun, this is not the snow to turn into the wind by blowing into the trumpet, this is goddamned ice! There is nothing stopping it. We cannot survive under this ice. All we can do is run away. Run away Finn! Just run!" Gavin said to Finn.

The terror that shadowed Gavin's entire body was unbelievable. He rushing grabbed Finn's hand, who was looking at the sky, and both of them ran to a side under the scary rain of ice. Maybe there is a solution for this as well. Gavin didn't know what to do anymore. He didn't even have time to

think. The only thing going through his mind was not to be hit by a big piece of ice.
All the words, predictions, and allusions to the final day ended in one word, reality! The reality that Finn was watching now with Gavin. He was trying to escape from the reality that he was afraid would destroy him. Was the effort just enough? He had a bad feeling about this. He couldn't say goodbye to those he loved anymore. He could hear Gavin's voice, "Finn, walk fast! Just quick! The ice is getting bigger."
Gavin's voice turned into a loud moan after finishing his sentence. Finn looked behind him. A piece of big and sharp ice had hit Gavin's leg so hard that the sharp tip of the ice had passed through the leg and reached the ground. Gavin, who had fallen to the ground, was screaming and moaning. He grabbed the ice in his leg with both hands to pull it out, but the tip of the ice stuck to the ground. It was almost possible to pull out the ice. At the last moment, Gavin was still trying to survive. "Gavin, over your head!" Finn said.
A large icicle was falling from the sky on his head when Gavin said the last sentence of his life with

a smile: "This is the final day."
Finn closed his eyes because didn't want to see this horrible scene. When he opened his eyes, Gavin's blood was splattered on his face, and there was nothing left of Gavin on the ground but blood. Finn remembered Gavin's last sentence and muttered with a bloody face, "This is the Final day."

Chapter 1
Highwill
The Striseong

"**M**ay I ask why?"
"If the contents of the letter be true, I can't let this happen," John Highwill said. “Death of thousands of people! Because of the mistakes their ancestors made in the past. It has been a long time since that day, they have recovered and the effects of the substance have gone. Of course I hope so, but I knew that one day the Striseong resource would run out and I prayed that it would happen later. We should go to the chain and see the event closely. The passage of time has extinguished the flames and completely destroyed the lands. No one can live on the dead lands, not even Thorains! "

"What if it's a lie? What if it is a trap? What if the Thorains made a suit that could walk through

fire?"
"The letter was written by Pollis Crasly, who is Teo Crasly ancestor; it means that the Craslys are still in power. After seven centuries, it is really admirable."
"The Highwills also did this."
"But they lost. Because of the cruel king, the one who killed my father and called himself the last of the Highwill."
"He wasn't the last Highwill, you are. That's why I won't let you do this. We need you."
"I can't hide in a corner and see what will happen tomorrow or in the future; Besides, I'm not going to go alone, we will go with the best knights and riders. Get ready. Tomorrow morning, we're heading to the Iron Chain to see the King of Hell, Pollis Crasly."
After an argument with Liam, he left the chamber. He stood on the veranda. The weather in Hidden Fire in the early days of summer was as hot as the Land of Fire. In the yard, the soldiers practiced without uniforms. Sweat was pouring from their foreheads on the hot ground and they were panting. John saw his son, Taimen, training

with Sir Iker May, Commander of the Irence Guards. Iker May's hair was almost white, but there were still old and strong bones in him; He waved the wooden sword in the air like it had become a part of him. Unlike him, Taimen had just become young; His black hair was getting brighter day by day. Two people from two different generations were fighting. Taimen was just defending and guarding. Sir Iker had taken the opportunity to attack him and trapped him with consecutive strikes. The heat of the air pressed him from one side, and Iker's strikes pressed him from the other side as well. Sir Iker struck the twenty-eighth strike. Taimen answered very weakly; So that the pressure of the impact caused the wooden sword to break and half of it was separated. He felt the tip of Sir Iker's sword against his throat as he looked down. Sir Iker put the wooden sword back in its special place and smiled at him. "Next time."

Sir Iker bowed at John as he saw him. "My Lord." He said.

Taimen looked behind him, his father was standing. John dismissed Sir Iker. "You can try

harder, but never give up." He told Taimen. "Come, I want to show you something."
"What?"
"Come on."
John took his son to a blacksmith. The workers were busy. The owner of the blacksmith's shop, Orrin, forbade workers from working as he saw them. He dismissed all the workers, and immediately placed a sword on the table at John's command. Taimen could see the tanned leather skin made from snakeskin very well. He remained silent till his father would explain what the sword was for. Blacksmith Orrin left after bowing. John took the sword from a hilt, pulled it out, and put it next to its scabbard. "It is for you. Since we came to Hidden Fire, I have entrusted Master Orrin to make the best sword for you. It's time to use a real sword, not a wooden one." John said.
Taimen was surprised. "Am I supposed to use this in real battle?"
“Surely, you are your brother Ray's sword, as Norris Ritanion is Richard Azberns’ sword. Your duty is to defend him against enemies. You can't defend with a wooden sword."

Taimen picked up the sword, assessed its length; its flatness was unique, it was made of Nepp steel. Pure steel of the second grade, called "Stormwin ". He touched it, it was very elegant. Their family leaf sign was engraved on the handle, but it was white in color. "I call it The Last Leaf of the Final Day," Taimen said.
"Well, as you are the last leaf." John said. "Tomorrow we'll go to the chain, then we'll go back to Irence."
Time runs like a fresh horse at a specific speed for each person; fast for one, slow for another. It runs to turn today into tomorrow and tomorrow into the next day. The only difference with the horse was that it didn't need anything to run. Not to water, not to food, not to rest to prepare for running or any other creature that depends on it. Time passed very quickly for John from his birth to the revolution; So he did not remember anything from that time, but from the time of the revolution until the arrival of the Taleskis and after the long winter, the kingdom of Richard Azberns had been very difficult until now. Each moment remained in his memory and became a

part of him. When King Iryn Highwill called himself the last Highwill and killed his son, the people called him a genocidal. He wanted to kill John as well, but he was run away from the city by his father's people. John had heard that Enara Azberns, his first wife, had been burned alive by the people in a house on Ice Street by order of the king. After that, the news reached the king that John was also killed by his knights. King Iryn decided to do the last thing, which is to kill himself. He believed that with his death, Mountain of the conqueror will collapse into the Red Sea and on the final day of the world will begin with the arrival of two-faced-walkers. After drinking the poison, he died sitting on the Infinity throne, but Mountain of the conqueror did not move even a bit. John had reached Irence at that time. The news of his death was spread all over the South and Star City was in the chaos.

He was reviewing those memories while lying on the bed. His eyes were heavy. He pulled the white sheets over his head, till a moment later he fell asleep. He saw her dream again; it was very difficult to remember her face when awake. He

could only imagine her golden hair, but he could see her clearly in his dreams. The same golden hair that had a shine under the middle white. Her eyes were brown, with the same prominent face that looked more like paintings than reality. Her dress was made of the best silk, and there were busy patterns on it. Two golden miniature lions were attached to her chest. Enara Azberns had become beautiful, but a moment later, John saw her beautiful face screaming in the fire: "Help... Help..."

It turned into ugliness and bitterness. The sound of her moans was annoying. Every time he went to the fire to save her, the fire moved away from him. It was like, he was getting away from her as he came closer. Maybe he shouldn't have struggled, maybe he would have stopped, but his goal was to reach her. He increased his speed and ran faster. He suddenly arrived, stopped, he was shocked. The fire was extinguished, and the ashes were flying in the air. He couldn't believe it, but he... there was a knocking sound.The darkness of the night was hidden in the light of day, the sun rose from the east to the west. The sunlight had

reached his eyes from an open window in the room, and it was bothering him a bit. The sound came again, knock knock. "My lord, Lord Liam awaits you in the Great Hall," said the man behind the door.

There were big tables arranged in the big hall, they put food for breakfast on the front table. Twenty men were sitting on chairs enjoying the delicious breakfast of burnt bread, grilled fish, hard-boiled eggs and honey along with drinks. When John entered, they all stood up: "My Lord." John sat across from Liam. Sir Gayri Grant sat beside him on the right, spreading sliced fish on bread. His hair was obstructed his vision, he shook his head to get the hair to move, but it didn't work. He pushed them aside with his left hand. He ate the prepared bite with enthusiasm. John picked up a glass of milk, drink half of it, and asked Liam, "Is everything ready?"

"Yes," Liam replied shortly.

After finishing breakfast, they got ready to go. Outside, the daylight was like an arrow in John's eyes. The weather near the chain was probably warmer than anywhere else; the fires behind the

chain had made it hot and the heat reached a few yards from it. John got on his horse called “wind”. He was moving slowly, riders started from behind. Liam was standing in front of him but not far from him, and Taimen was behind him. After a few hours, they reached the iron chain. The horses stopped a few steps away from the chain. Liam gave John a piece of cloth. "Wear this to your face. The air over there is poisonous, polluted, and deadly." Liam said.
In front of him, the iron chain stood like a wall. It has said that the iron chain was made by Olyns the Conqueror with the Infinity Sword. The Iron Chain is the second construct made with the Infinity Sword. Observers of the event said that when Olyns the Conqueror hit the sword on the ground, the chains that fell on the ground were linked together and went into each other like rings, and a wall of black chains was made. After the chain was made, the men without authority or the Thorains were taken behind the chain. The third exceptional son of Olyns the Conqueror, Valerios Ness, called the first and last dragon rider of the Vach, rode his dragon and turned the land

into hell with his dragon's fire breath so that the Thorains would live underground with Striseong, a source of water which his made. But today the flames of hell are extinguished and the chain is vulnerable after seven centuries! John Highwill was sitting on his brown mare in front of the iron chain. Behind him, his knights and riders were looking at the chains in wonder as he was. The corpses, whose eyes were closed and blood flowed from them, were hanging on chains. There were four of them. Liam Lest, his brother-in-law, had told him that they were farmers in near of the Chain, who had been suspiciously kidnapped and murdered by the Thorains. After removing their eyes, they were sent home to their families. By saying the words: “we also see” and by sending a letter to the fifth person, they have announced their presence on the other side of the chain on the hot ground while cooling, and they have come out from under their graves. John had come to Hidden Fire a few months ago. The New Year and the celebration of the golden rule of Olyns the Conqueror would start for him by seeing those terrifying corpses, with death! The

extinguishing of the flames had allowed the Thorains to move to this side of the chain. Men in strange clothes were telling very bitter stories from behind the chain to the people of Ventos, which caused people to panic. John had recently heard those stories, but he did not believe them. After seeing the bodies hanging from the chains, the matter had become more clear for him. All the riders covered their faces with handkerchiefs like John. The chain had no gate on that side to pass through. Giant chains were looped all over it, and its length continued on both sides as far as John could see. The height of the chain was up to the clouds in the sky. John asked: "How did they climb this chain? The chain is too hot to climb. Most importantly, how do we get there?"

"Thorains don't climb the chain and they never will," Liam replied. "Living underground has cut them off from the real world. The only way they can get here is by sea. Of the tens of them who hit the water, maybe one or two of them will manage to reach the land that was not set on fire."

"what about us?"

"There is a way for us. That's a way that they

don't think about at all."
"What?"
"The Underground. They think that we are coming by ship. "For them, the ship is like gold, but there is no ship."
Liam ordered his men to dig the place that was marked on the map. His men went to the place he had shown them with picks and shovels and started digging there. John got off his horse, he didn't need a horse for the rest of the way. Taimen approached him, "Are we going to leave here, father?" He asked.
“No, you're not going anywhere. You wait here with half of the people until we come back. "I don't want to risk putting your life in danger." John answered.
"But father..."
"I said no, Taimen, you stay here."
Digging the ground was almost finished and they had reached the secret tunnel under the pit. The men put the digging tools on the ground and sat down on the soil they had dug to rest. They had gone ten feet deep into the ground, and they had dug about a yard horizontally. The riders lighted

torches to use its light in the dark pit. John moved down the pit with Liam and the knights. It didn't take long for them to reach the secret tunnel. The light of torches could show the way well. It smells bad, worse than feces. John could still smell that bad smell with the handkerchief tied over his face. A little dust was falling from above their heads, which scared them all. “Lest the tunnel collapse on us and we stay under the rubble forever.” the knight who was walking behind John conveyed this fear to the others with a whisper. As they reached the end of the tunnel, the knight's fear turned into a smile on his face. The wooden ladder, with cobwebs on each rung, was standing upright. The light of the torch showed the way upwards. That ladder was still intact after so many years, or maybe the old magic was left inside it. It didn't matter, the important thing was that it existed now and it made the work of John and everyone else easier. The leader climbed the old wooden ladder with a torch in his hand. He reached the fourth step when suddenly the wood broke and made a scary sound. The man with the torch was scared, sweat was dripping from his

forehead, he paused a little then he continued. He was very focused to climb up carefully. When he reached the last step of the ladder, he touched the iron ceiling above him to find its handle. With a great effort, he pulled it away by holding the handle, the iron was hardly moved. The man with the torch saw the middle white light that came from above the sky and through the slit that he had opened, it shone down into the pit and made it white. He pulled the iron roof completely then pulled himself up stubbornly. The others followed him. The ground they were standing on was the land of fire or hell. The surface of the earth was streaked like deserts; Even though the dark brown streaks were far away, it was so hot that the heat had passed through John's boots and reached his feet. He could feel its high temperatures from inside his boots. A warm wind was blowing under the middle white, which had the effects of flames along with it. Only John's eyes were out, his whole body was covered with clothes. That hot wind burns his eyes very much; so he could not bear to keep them open for a long time. He was blinking rapidly and blocking his vision with his

hand so that the wind would not reach it. "We need to find the loneliest house, the passage to the underworld," Liam said. "From the loneliest house, we can go to the basement, where the Thorains live, where their people are waiting for us."

"How do we find it?" John asked.

"It's not too difficult. The loneliest house is the only house and shelter that exists here. So, I don't think it will be that difficult to find the loneliest house in this flat land. We have to go straight from the pit we came from; because the pit we came from is in line with the loneliest house."

"So as the middle white is here, we have to go fast before night falls. Turn off the torches, we'll need them later."

John could also see under his feet as he walked on the dead ground. There was no grass or plants, it was dry. The rain did not help either; however, the fire would not be extinguished until the time came. And the time had just come. With the arrival of summer, it had not rained yet. John thought to himself that even if it rained, the destroyed lands would not have their past

character. The soil had turned into rough stones. "Finally we found that damn house!" one of the people shouted happily.

John went forward to see it clearly. The house was made of black iron like the iron roof that was placed on the pit. It seemed to be fireproof; because it still remained. Liam knocked on the door several times with his sword. The door opened a moment later. A man with a big head that was bigger than his body opened the door. He was short and reached Liam's knees. "Who are you? What do you want?" The man asked.

"You're probably the big head Lake," Liam replied.

He took the letter out of his pocket and gave it to him. "The weather outside is not very good. If you would be kind enough to open that door completely for me and the others to come in, I would be very grateful."

The Big Head Lake looked at him with a frown. He opened the letter and saw its handwriting. "Only one person writes this ugliness, it's Pollis Crasly. Yes, then you are his big guest, come in."

The house consisted entirely of a large hall

without any rooms, like a deserted hall, except for a few tables and chairs, which were also made of iron. A heater could be seen at the end of it. "Why did you light a fire in this deadly hot weather?" said Sir Gayri Grant. "And why the fire... "

The Big Head Lake walked in a strange way, his head moving while walking. "Fool, it is a cold fire that cools a person, not that it burns him like firewood." He replied. "This is called cold fire, which is purple in color. Anyway, do you want to go underground? So you have to replace that big iron table in the middle. Just do it carefully."

Sir Gayri ran towards the fire. He had never seen anything like that in his life. He held his hands beside it, he could feel the coldness. Liam moved the table with a few people. It was flat underneath, nothing could be seen. Liam was about to say something to Big Head Lake when he pulled a lever and two irons separated. The stairs below could be seen. Liam was stunned, and John was watching what was happening. The two irons stopped at a distance that a person could pass through. Liam was the first person who went

down the stairs and the last one was Sir Gayri Grant. Sir Gayri was hurrying behind them, he felt Lake's heavy gaze at him. There were about a hundred stairs without a rest area. It was not difficult to go down the stairs; it was not easy either. They passed the last step and arrived on the flat ground. Its floor was covered with hard black stone. Two people were standing in front of the stairs with ice-tipped spears. Their clothes, from their upper body to their pants and even their shoes, were attached with purple colored ice in small and large rings that were placed a few inches apart. "This is the entrance to the Freedom Street," said one of them. “The King Pollis Crasly is in the middle house, the house that connects the four streets.” He had a conversation with the person next to him and continued: "Kano will accompany you there."

Kano, along with John and others, walked along the Freedom Street towards the middle house. There were houses with white doors on both sides of the street. There were few people on the street. John saw a little girl with a circle of ice attached to her chest, which was sky blue in color. She was

sitting next to one of the white doors and innocently looked at the strangers who came to their street. A few young boys passed by them laughing, they were talking together and laughing. John looked up, the height of the ground to the ceiling was as high as the pit they had dug. The ceiling was like a starry sky from a close-up view, which had illuminated the ground without the moon, the sun, and the middle white. Ice of different colors of green, blue, yellow, red, purple, pink, black, white and brown were attached to it and made a beautiful landscape. Finally, they arrived at the middle house. The middle house was bigger and wider than all the houses, and the Striseong source was inside it. Through it, it was connected to all the houses in the Light, the Eye, the Freedom, and the Black streets. It had large golden doors which two crossed axes were engraved on them. Kano approached the door, John and the others were behind him. He knocked on the door with a sharp ice tip quietly; so that he did not make any sound. The axes were uncrossed, turned vertical, and the door opened. King Crasly and his family were

standing behind the door. John went forward and saw him closely. His long hair reached his shoulders and was white like the ice attached to his clothes. He had a sad face, with long eyebrows. In his hand was a rod with a small round steelhead, it was called the scepter of the king. Literally, it was the key to Striseong. Whoever holds it, all the power of the underground belongs to him. "You must be Highwill," said King Pollis Crasly. “Of course, which Highwill? I can't count. Thirty, forty, fifty, you know what? Who cares which Highwill you are? The important thing is that you are a Highwill, and as far as the news has reached the underground, you are no longer the king on the ground, but I am still the king of the underground, Highwill."

"You're right. The Highwills are no longer kings on the ground, but they still own the lands you live under; that means it still belongs to us. Whether on the ground, under the ground, or the people who live on both sides of it."

"Okay, so we've got a lot to do, Highwill."

He took the scepter towards his family and

introduced each of them to John. After that, Crasly said to John, "It's time to talk about the matter you came to talk about, with Striseong, alone, of course."
Liam interjected. "This is not possible. You are not supposed to be with... "
"No problem." John interrupted, "King Crasly knows that if something happens to anyone, hell on ground will spread to the underground."
"This is the real Highwill!" said Crasly. "The rest of your people are my guests. Be sure, they will be treated well, with the best food and drinks. Probably, the hot and scorching weather has made you thirsty and hungry."
John and Crasly walked through the main hall and reached the back. They climbed the stairs, reached the corridor to go to the Striseong that was in the heart of the middle house. At the end of the corridor, there was an old iron room, they entered it and Crasly pulled the handle. The iron room moved straight and made an annoying sound like iron hitting iron when moving. It moved slowly.
"Why did you kill those people and hang them in chains?" John asked. "Was this a threat?"

"No, it wasn't my job. The black street people were the same troublemakers who ran away and killed your people like that. I am tired of them too. I want to take them all to the last point of the land of fire, hell, and kill them all."
The iron room arrived at its destination. They left the room. John took a few steps forward and saw the source. "Striseong, the heart of our lives," Crasly said. "Without this we cannot last a day. It produces our water, it changes the air underground and many other things."
A large blue crystal-like ice was stuck in the wall. Thousands of grooves were made around it. Water was flowing through the narrow grooves. The lining of the grooves was covered by ice and each of them went to one of the houses in the underground. "Do you see the grooves?" Crasly said. "They are getting smaller. If the grooves be closed, total destruction will come to us and the Striseong will be over. It's time for us to return to the ground, where we were before. Sometimes I think why we live underground? This question has been in the minds of our past generations and it continues until now. Stories have been told

since ancient times, but I believe they are all lies. What is the truth? No matter. What did our ancestors do? No matter. Thousands of people's lives are important now and you can save them. The question is, will you do it?"
"I need a lot of time."
"My people don't have enough time."
“How long do you think it will take for Striseong to end?"
"Maybe one or two years at the most."
John approached Striseong. He took off his glove and touched it. Its coldness was different from the coldness on the ground; it was like, it was different. "The Light Street has been extinguished by white ice that always kept it lit." Crasly continued. "The grooves of some people's houses have been closed and their water has been cut off. It won't take long for the grooves of other streets to be closed. I had to bring them to Black Street, which caused discord and chaos. Some of them died of thirst, and some of them believe that we should attack the chain and destroy it. We also have our own problems. All this can be fixed by going to the ground. Natural air, natural water,

and natural life are not too much to ask. I don't want bloodshed between my people and you for this."

John moved away from Striseong and came towards him. “Well, what do you say, Highwill?” Crasly asked.

Chapter 2
Highwill
The Iron faced

And finally, on the ground, a blessing from God that had not yet caught fire with the dragon; because there were no more dragons. The last dragon with its rider had been killed in the battle of life. Valerios, the dragon rider, could hear his dragons moaning in the sky as he fell from the dragon to the ground. The blood that was pouring from his severed wings; It was like rain coming from the sky. The dragon, with its severed wings, hit the ground in the most dreadful way possible and died in front of his eyes. He couldn't believe it, and if he did, he couldn't do anything. His next dragon also fell from the sky. After his dragons, he fell forever with his father.

John felt better on the ground, feeling alive. The

underground air had made him sick. His eyes were burning, his throat was festering and his voice was difficult to hear. He had to rest in Hidden Fire for a few days to get better. The fields of Hidden Fire were fertile lands despite being located near the chain. Every year, it had the highest outcome compared to other places. These lands had made Lord Liam Lest the most generous man in the South and Ventos.

They set out for Irence at the sunrise on the fifth day and arrived at the middle white on the next day, on the twelfth day of tweek. The sun was hidden between the white stars. Irence was seen white, this was not the first time John saw it white. Irence was the only castle left from the first Rencen. It is also called the first castle of Rencen II. It was destroyed several times by the enemies. The last person to rebuild it was the first King of Ventos. John and his men entered the White Castle without any special attention. Edison Berk, his steward, came to his horse. His hair was black like a raven, even the middle withe could not lighten it a little bit. His hazel-shaped eyes were locked on John. "My lord, Rylord Clint lays ill,"

he said. "At the beginning of the new year, he lays ill. He is no more able to get up now."
John got off the horse. He took off his leather gloves and asked, "What do you mean? Can he speak?"
"My lord, you should see him. His situation is critical." Edison Berk answered.
The master's room was located on the eastern side of the castle. His bed was placed under the window. The white light was shining through the window and was focused on a point. The whole room was dark, except for his bed, which was twinkling like a star in a corner. The birds were singing on the edge of the open window. The crow that always was with him was croaking under the bed. On the throne, Rylord Clint thought back to the past: the day he had waited in Skyglass for his name to be called, to be trained in Paradise under the surveillance of the first-class masters who have the golden badge. It was very rare to announce the name of a vassal for this purpose. He had done his best and had seen the result. After completing his training, he was sent to Ancient Irence. After thirty years of service, he

had fallen to a corner of the room. He was exhausted by being a teacher, his eyes seeing the words dimly. He often used magnifying glasses. "Dear Rylord."

His attention was on the other scholars in Paradise that he did not understand the presence of John and his entry into his room. He looked at John. His lips were dry. "My lord, I want to get up, but the bones of my body do not allow me to do so. I have lost their control, forgive me." he spoke softly liker a gentle wind.

John took his wrinkled hand. It was very hot, as hot as the Iron chains, but different. It gave him a special feeling. "How are you, dear Rylord? When will you get your full health? I need your honest and helpful advice."

Rylord Clint gave a short laugh that caused him to cough. He covered his mouth with his other hand. "My health! I don't think a man like me needs it anymore. The only thing that can relieve me from this situation is death! A painless death. But before that, I have a request."

John understood from his tired and helpless voice that he was not lying. "Whatever it is." John said.

"Before my illness, I have been thinking about my successor for several years. After my death, they will probably send him to Irence, the Rylord who is chosen from the capital, but I have a request from you. I know that the king gives the least importance to the Rylords of the other kingdom, or it is the last thing he thinks about."
"What do you want?"
“When I was in the Training Tower on Silverown. There was a young boy named Allen who worked there. Alan secretly read our books. He was very interested in this field. He had learned to read and write while cleaning by listening to the great master. I had recently heard that he had applied for being a Rylord, but the Rkings did not allow him to do so. They consider it a shame to give the title of a Rylord to a servant. John, the sun of my knowledge is setting, but the sun of his knowledge is rising. And you, John, need a new sun. I'm sure he will shine well for you and your boys. I want you to bring Allen here to be replaced with me."
"If this is your request, I will do it. I will immediately write a letter to Silverown, the

capital of Paradise."
"No, not just letter. Rkings will not accept it by a few words. They consider it as disrespect to themselves. You have to do it yourself or leave it to your sons. Let Ray do it. He will one day be the warden of the South and Lord of Irence, let him have the honor of being able to use the allies of the Vach in the future."
"I promise you it will be done."
John left Rylord Clint alone with his thoughts in the room. He went to his usual retreat in the great hall beneath Irence, where only the kings of Highwill could go there. The kings of Highwill have come Irence from Skyglass to see there and they know its secrets. John had to go down a thousand steps to get there, but only five steps were needed to go up. It was almost dark, the middle white was setting. It gave its whiteness to the starry night with moonlight. John picked up a torch, walked into the center of Irence, and arrived at a black stone gate. A stone gate was made from the collision of two large pieces of stone, which the sign of its intersection could be seen. The stones were still pressing and crushing

each other, which was like clenching teeth together. The magic that was left inside them prevented the stones from shattering and made them in that situation. “I am John from house of Highwill, from the generation of the previous kings of Vach, the warden of the South, Star shield of Ventos, and the Lord of Irence.” John whispered. "I command you to drop your stones." The stone gate opened vertically. The only thing that could be seen was the darkness. John entered with a lighted torch. He saw behind him. He saw Irence from the outside. It was beautiful, he would lose that beauty in a few moments later as the gate be closed. He fixed his eyes towards it, but the time took the opportunity to see, and finally the gate was completely closed. The torch in his hand showed a spiral staircase with thousands of steps leading down. And it ended in white light. It looked scary and mysterious but also interesting. He thought to himself: if he goes on a lower step; That is, it goes up in the created loops that reach down. He felt like he was falling. The first time, it had taken a lot of courage to do this carefully. He showed himself the next step

with a torch so that he could put his foot on it correctly. These days, he was going down and up the stairs repeatedly. He went down the stairs towards the light. Finally, after walking thousands of steps, he reached the light. The light was like a gate in front of him. The only thing he had to do was to pass it. He did this and passed through the light. He did it calmly like the previous times. When he reached that side of the gate, he put down his torch; because it was no longer needed. The lighting of there did not require the lighting of a torch. He went further and saw a man who was busy fixing the size of the stones with a rule and the stone cutting tools. The man got up with the sound of familiar footsteps, turned his head. John could see the iron mask covering his face. His whole face was covered except his eyes. His eyes were light brown. He was wearing a long black cloth, which looked like a cloak. His long black hair was pulled back like a horse's mane. He was tall compared to John, which was like the knights of the stories. "Say my name, John, so I can be free." He said when he saw John.

John was sad because of the events of the past few

days that made this tweek bitter for him. "Hundreds of kings before me didn't know your name. Why do you think that I know?" john said.
"At least you can try."
"I guessed a thousand times and every thousand times I was wrong. Trust me, if I really knew, I would have said it a long time ago, but I don't know, Iron-faced. I think no one knows. You have never told me how you got here."
"If this iron wasn't on my face, you would definitely know me. I believe that one day someone will finally say my name. When fate ends on that day, I will be free, but now I have to work."
"Yes, I believe in your belief. Why is it day every time I come here, and the sun is in the sky? "Doesn't sun ever set?"
“John, I have to fix the Irence, the ancient castle. When it gets dark, I can't see and how can I work in the dark? It seems that I have to work under the sun for thousands of years to fix Irence.
"And the middle white?"
“We don't work in the middle white, only the sun. Say my name so I can be free."

John became a little angry. "Just finish this discussion. I didn’t come here to play with you. I want to talk about the chains and the Thorains. You warned me, but I didn't listen. Of course, until I saw it with my own eyes."
Iron faced explained, "Ryed Horror, during the time of Olyns the Conqueror, there was a rumor that a man born in the golden soil of Poorvios had created a substance that it could take authority from people and affect their brains, so that he can control them. Ryed Horror works in such a way that when a person eats it, his eyes become red and his strength doubles, which can easily lift a person and knock him down. He can feel his emotions, but he doesn't have the power to use it. He can see, hear and touch, but he can't act by his will. The only word he can say is "kill". When the substance flows into the body of a person, it works quickly after a few hours, but it would take many years for him to return to normal. More importantly, if men were wounded, they would feel no pain. They did not understand the feeling of weakness, helplessness, hopelessness or anything in general. This rumor turned into a

reality on Vach. With this substance, Teo Crasly made a great army of twenty thousand men and attacked Irence. Olyns the Conqueror defeated them, but Teo Crasly's army couldn't live among the common people. Olyns the Conqueror couldn’t find a cure for them either. He locked them behind the chains in the underground so that the effects of the substance would disappear. The substance was inherited to the children, which made it take many years for the substance to disappear."

John pointed out: "And it seems that the substance is gone; Because the fires are extinguished. They demand to live on the ground."

The iron faced picked up a stone. He went on top of the wooden scaffolding, which was not very high from the ground. He wanted to put it between two other stones. John was standing next to his desk. The iron faced put the stone on the wall, the stone was a little bit bigger. He came down with the stone. when John placed in front of him , he asked: "What should I do now?"

"What do you think?"

"Peace"

Iron faced stopped working. “Do you know how difficult it is to build a castle this big alone? The lower parts are easy, but the upper parts are very difficult. But know this too, it is not impossible. So your peace with Crasly is not impossible either. Give him the lands next to the chains so that he can live with his people. Maybe they returned to their land, Poorvios; but if they want to use Ryed Horror again, the best defense is attack."

He shrank the stone a few inches, then he climbed up again. This time, the stone was placed correctly. "Living with new people should probably be exciting, John." he continued.

"And also dangerous. When do you think you will finish? I mean, make the Irence completely?" John asked.

"I don't know, the inner parts are being finished. Only the walls around it are left. John, unfortunately I have to tell you this, this is our last meeting." Iron faced said.

"I think this should be our goodbye."

"Say my name so it's not the last."

"If I remember, you told me I could know the fate

of one of my sons. If this is our last meeting, then the time has come." John said.
Iron faced came down. "Alright, looks like you're ready. Tell me his name, I will help you as much as I know."
"Now, my choice is Ray, my eldest son," John hesitated.
"Sir Ray Highwill, Green Knight. The greatest knight of Ventos, the best fighter the Vach has ever seen."
"Is he present on the Final day?"
"He's taking part in a great battle that spans the entire Vach, a battle that the world has never seen before. He establishes the united flag and becomes a hero that people love and..."

John couldn't stop himself. "And his death?"
"Do you really want to know, John?"
"Yeah, he's my heir, maybe I can do something."
"The death of Sir Ray Highwill takes place in the strangest possible way; So that he doesn't even think about it. He dies in total coolness. By someone who..."
"Who?"

Iron faced lowered his head, took a deep breath, and looked at John. "You better not know this part. It's better for you, that's my advice to you, John.
“Tell me.”
"Alright, Sir Ray Highwill will be killed..."
Iron faced completed his sentence. "By His brother, William."

Chapter 3
Highwill
The sons of Irence

The swords were clashing, their sound was sharp. A dance on the light-gray hillside. The actors knew their job and they were doing it excellent. None of them would fail in a one-on-one battle. They responded to the opponent's strike with quick, technical and predictable strikes.

Sir Ray Highwill, the Green Knight, was fighting with Sykin, the thousand-year-old Man, and William Highwill, the boy adventurer, was fighting with Troy Vent. Four fighters were striking each other with steel swords side by side.

Ray's eyes were like light golden grass under the sunlight, which is why he was called the Green Knight. In his 15th year of his life, he was knighted by the king Richard Azberns, when he had participated in the competitions for the

celebration of the kingdom. His hair was light brown. He was wearing a black tanned leather robe with brown edges and a green leaf sewn on it.

In front of him was Sykin, the oldest man of Irence and the Vach. With an incredible age of almost thousands years, or maybe more! As he always said, the passage of time has made his memory weak. He couldn't remember what year he was born? Who are his parents? Does he have any siblings? From which tribe, farm, castle, city and land did he come from or belong to? He has been in Irence for as long as he could remember. He was cursed to live in Ventos. When Alvess Vent Highwill, became Olyns the conqueror, As the Lord of Irence, he was sworn to his twelve kingdoms, until the arrival of the last Highwill, when the situation changed. His experience was more than wise and old people, and he had been around the block a few times more than they had. His face still showed the youth. His bones were healthier than warriors and strong people. He shook the sword like it was a toy in his hand. His hair was black and white, and the white streaks of

his hair had left a mark of old age on his face. He had gray eyes with a middle white color. He was wearing a silver dress decorated with small blue stones attached with black straps. His sword was made by Nepp Ritanion himself, the maker, from the first grade of pure steel called "Swordwin". The steel blade was tearing those iron armors like piece of cloth.

William, the second son of John Highwill and Ray's half-brother, was moving on the other side. He was full of youthful enthusiasm. His short hair was charcoal black. He had a brown face and dark brown eyes. He was called the adventurous boy. At the age of eight, he had mysteriously missing. His father had found him in the Silver Forest in Whiteel. Now, how he got to Whiteel from the south was a mystery! He was wearing a simple robe with no pattern, completely beige in color.

Troy Vent was In front of him, a vassal from Ventos. A vassal from Ventos with a great desire to become a Midnyter. If he became a Midnyter, his name would be changed to Mid Troy Vent. His hair was pure gold, like the Azbernsian. His eyes were black, he had broad square shoulders,

he was stylish, and of course, he was handsome. His fight in swordsmanship was also unique. He owes this to the efforts of the Night-white-day. The sword clung to him like clothes, and during the fight, he dealt with it like it was a part of his body; so that if it was separated, it would be painful. He was preparing himself for the Whiteel competitions. He was light as a butterfly, fast as a deer, and roared like a lion at his opponent. He was William's best friend and companion.

The two fights had reached their climax. Everyone was tired, but the loser was not clear yet. Their ears were ringing from the sound of steel hitting steel. William dodged, he lowered his head to let the Troy's sword to pass over his head. When he raised his head, he straightened himself. "It was so close!"

“Yeah, it was so close!” Troy said.

Troy kicked him hard in the chest. William fell to the ground. The tip of the sword approached his throat slowly. "What was that?" William complained.

"You should not hesitate, hesitation gives the enemy the opportunity to take advantage of the

situation; because the enemy doesn't wait. His only goal is to defeat you, with or without honor. The only thing that matters is winning." Troy said.
"Oh God, am I your enemy?"
Troy took his hand, helped him to stand. "No, you're my friend."
"Okay, then act like that."
The two looked at Ray and Sykin's training. "Your Brother, Sir Ray, he's great!" Troy said.
Both of them were sweating, their faces were wet; However, they continued to fight until one person would lose. They were hitting each other so fast and hard that their hands were tired and their fingers were weak. Sykin took guard, Ray hit him with all of his power. In the moment after the strike, he was shocked! The blade of his sword broke and was thrown to a side. When he saw the other side, William moaned then fell on the ground for the second time, but this time he didn't have the power to get up. Ray ran to him and sat next to him. The tip of the sword had entered his body, had torn his clothes and was red with blood. It was deep wound. "Brother, look at

me," Ray whispered softly. "You'll be fine, just don't close your eyes."
He looked at Troy. "Go quickly to Irence and bring the doctor. By that time, we will reach the cemetery of forty fighters."
Troy left hurriedly and panicked. "I'm not going to die, am I?" moaned William. "What will people say if I die? Wrongly killed by the blade of his brother's sword, isn't it funny?"
"Are you thinking about what people are going to say in this situation? You are not going to die, I won't let it. It's just a small wound. I will stop the bleeding with a cloth until the doctor comes. And when the doctor arrives, he gently pulls the blade out of your body and you'll get well as soon as possible. So we have to pray that Troy will bring Dr. Smith soon."
Ray tore a piece of cloth from his clothes. He tied the cloth gently over William's wound. He raised William with Sykin's help. They took him by the shoulders and moved him down the mountain slowly. "Which of you should I blame?" William said with a snigger as he struggled with the pain. "Sykin because of his sharp sword or Ray because

of his blunt sword or maybe the blacksmith for his irresponsibility and making a sword that breaks easily. All of them made it happen."
"No one, dear brother, it was just an accident."
"You're right, it was an accident, but with the pain I'm suffering, I think to myself, how likely is it that the blade of the sword didn't hit Troy? He and I were standing next to each other. Maybe this is my destiny to die by you."
Ray stopped and stared into his eyes. "You're not going to die, you understand!"
William had never seen Ray so serious before. "Yeah, I hope so. I still want to become a Midnyter, but I can't if I die."
They continued to move down the mountain. The blade of the sword had caused terrible pain in his body. It embedded itself in William's body, surrounded by his skin, flesh, bones, and blood. He wanted Doctor Smith to come as soon as possible and save him from this situation and end his pain. All of these depended on how fast Troy could run. Therefore, he should have prayed that Troy would arrive to Irence as soon as possible and they would come to the cemetery with the

fastest horse, of course, if he didn’t die before arriving to the cemetery and was not buried there next to the other forty fighters. It wasn't difficult to going down the mountain, but bringing someone who was bleeding made it difficult. "Whose genius idea was it to train on top of the mountain? It is also the highest mountaintop! What was wrong with training on the ground?" William complained.

"If you don't talk, you make it easier. Try to stay awake. Instead of moving your lips, keep your eyes open."

They were carefully leading William down the high cliffs so that he would not get hurt. They reached a height, it was very high from there; it seemed about seven feet. They stopped. They put William on the ground. William's eyes were closed but his tongue was still working. “I'm still alive?!” he said softly.

Ray and Sykin searched around for another way down. They carefully checked the area around there, but there was no other way. "I think this is the only possible way, what should we do?" Ray asked Sykin.

Sykin looked down, "If we go back to find a better way, your brother will be lost. I think we have to go from here."
"How?" Ray wondered.
"Since we don't have a rope, we jump!"
After that jump, fortunately it was flat all the way down. They could easily walk over the small stones that rolled under their feet. On the hillside, hot needle-shaped thorns were growing at a distance of a few yards from each other, and mountain plants could be seen around the big stones, which their leaves had dried in the sunlight; Like William. Finally, they came down from the mountain and reached the flat ground.
"How long does it take to get there? I can't take it anymore, Ray." A weak voice could be heard from William.
“Not too much, we should thank God that we came down from the mountain. There is nothing left until the cemetery! We are almost close."
The beautiful, pleasant summer morning had started with the loud sound of wrens and drizzle; it made the weather perfect for a great day. The four warriors set out for the Gray Mountains on

the twelfth and last day of Tweek, which was a public holiday in the Five kingdoms and the Alliance. They climbed to its highest summit to begin a dance with steel swords that was ending with a bitter memory. Sir Ray Highwill was hoping for a happy ending. Sykin's eyes widened. "Look, standing sticks on the ground! We almost arrived at the cemetery. So there is no distance left, we have to try harder."

Ray was happy for a moment, but then he got worried. "Why hasn't Troy come yet?"

"Today is the twelfth day. The doctor probably went to Torence to buy the desired drugs from the market."

"Yeah... yeah... I wasn't paying attention at all. Damn this luck!"

They arrived at the entrance to the cemetery. The weather was very hot. The sun beat its extreme heat on the graves; It was like the dead were also warmed up and the warmth had reached the underground. The living were walking next to the graves. There was no shadow; because there was no shelter. Endless graves could be seen side by side, along with perpendicular pentagonal

sticks. They stopped next to a grave. They laid William down next to a grave. They stood above him to make a canopy. William kept coughing. The pain in his throat had bother him. Ray saw the sticks sunk into the ground, the outer end of which had five sides. There was a name engraved on each side, he read them. The first side on the right was written: His father Damien. On the second side on the left, his mother's name was written. Thirdly, his birthday. On the fourth side, the day of his death and finally on the last side, the person's name was written. In the middle of the pentagram, the reason of his death was narrated in such a way that he passed away due to natural causes. In Ray's mind, unwanted thoughts were found and unwanted images formed. The image of name of William's parents Instead of the name of the dead person's parents, and the reason of his death, "killed by his brother". Ray clear these wrong and negative images from his mind and think of better things; That Troy will arrive with the doctor in a few minutes and save his brother. Ray bent down to see how infected the wound had become. The blood had passed

through the fabric and made it bloody. He looked at Will's face. "Can you open your eyes?"
"I can, but I don't want to." Will that his face became wet, moaned.
“Why?” Ray asked.
"I want to get to know the darkness a little before I join it. Do you know what I mean?"
"You are not going to join the darkness..." Ray shouted.
Ray was speechless. Will was right. The darkness covered the whole world. His eyes were blinded, he couldn’t see anywhere. Ray was shocked, but when he thought more, he said: "This is the darkness of the middle white. Damn it!"
After a few minutes of darkness, the middle white came. It hid all the shadows and cooled the air a little. On the day of the Frost and the Final day, it makes the air as cold as possible, but Ray knew that today was not the Final day. There were no clouds in the sky. The middle white had turned the darkness into the whiteness. The sky became like a sheet of white ice. The sound of a horse's hooves came from a distance coming towards them. As it got closer, the neighing of the horse

also could be heard. The horse stopped moving towards the grave where they were standing. Its rider had golden hair. Troy pulled the horse reins back. "I looked all over Irence, Doctor Smith was not there. His assistant, who was a young boy named Fredrick, explained to them: If I was a doctor, I could quickly stop the bleeding and remove the blade of the sword from his body. I can only make a medicine that will heal his wound, which will take a long time."
“How much?” Ray asked.
"I don't know."
"Alright, we'll put Will on the horse. Take him with you. Maybe the medicine will be prepared by then, or maybe the doctor will return to Irence."
With the help of others, they put Will on the horse behind Troy. Troy ran at full speed towards Irence under the middle white. Ray and Sykin stayed among the graves. Ray watched Troy walk away with Will. When they disappeared into the wind and dust, he looked around. He saw Sykin standing next to a grave and staring at it. He got close to him. On the side of the dead person's

name was written "Vegan". On the other sides, the name of father, mother, date of birth and date of death nothing was written. The cause of his death was "killed in the battle of life". "The Battle of Life began in the Red Sea and went all the way to Alanthus, but no corpse ever returned to Hallstreet or Ventos. How is this...?" Ray asked.
Sykin explained: "she had never participated in a life battle; because she had died much earlier than that. When the Highwills were kings of Ventos, I married many women, but she was the most beautiful woman I had ever seen. When I saw her for the first time, her eyes were shining like the stars. Her hair was as soft as water. Believe me, Ray, my curse made me to never have children. She married me even though she knew that. She knew that one day she will grow old and I will always stay young and I can watch her old age and her death. I wanted to show her the whole world, but I can't step on other lands except Ventos. I think it started from that rainy night. The rain was hitting the ground with its drops. There was thunder in the sky. If I remember correctly, a violent storm was forming. I was

sitting inside my room and looking out of the window when I received a letter. I couldn't believe it, I didn't want to believe it. It was written that she had been raped by mercenaries in Poorvios. They cut off her beautiful head. At that moment, I wanted to go to Poorvios and kill them all, but my legs didn't give me the strength. I never said goodbye to her. That day, I promised myself that I would never fall in love with anyone and never marry again. I made a grave here to commemorate her. I changed her name and I thought that she died somehow in the battle of life.

Sykin had a lump in throat, his tears running down his cheeks. He wiped them with the back of his hand. "I'm sorry to hear that," Ray said. “You told me many stories about kings, how long they ruled, the biggest and longest rule, the rule of brothers, or about Valerios the dragon rider who brought his dragons to the south. But you never said anything about your life. How long do you think this curse will last?"

"Until the Final day!" Sykin answered confidently.

Chapter 4
Azberns
We live until the Final day

"**I**nfinity throne, the strangest throne in the world, with ancient secrets. It has a long history. Based on the facts recorded in the ancient books, it is mentioned in this way that I will tell you in summary, so that you do not get bored. The infinite throne has been made three times in three different ways. For the first time, in the first Rencen, it is said that instead of a throne, there was a tree with shining stars hanging from its branches instead of fruit; So that those stars could create a light like the sun but with a smaller radius and give a city light. That tree was called the "Tree of Life". All the roots of the trees in the world were connected to it. In general, that tree

was the base of the world, the only bright earthly light of the world. Early humans in Hallstreet considered that tree a holy tree. At night, the stars of the tree brought beautiful light. Its light could be seen even from a great distance. A number of early humans, who were called Alryst men, built a wall around the tree and destroyed the tree. They spread its star fruits all over the city. They called the city "the Star City". They built a wooden throne from the trunk of the tree in the same place, which its branches were tied together and intertwined. Harris Hall called himself the King of the Alryst Men and the early humans, and the protector of the Star City. He ruled over the men imprisoned inside the wall. After Harris Hall, his descendants and future Ganesh ruled for thousands of years. When the King of Star City dies, his sword is cut into a hundred pieces, and one of the pieces is attached to the wooden throne as a memorial. By living inside the wall, stories were made for posterity, that behind the wall, the remaining lands are surrounded by the dead walkers and there's nothing left but the death. And they are the only living ones left in this

world. no one had gone behind the closed walls For thousands years, until the Nymens arrived at behind the city walls. The city walls were so high that it took a long time to climb them. After the siege of the city, the walls were destroyed. When the Nymens tore down the city walls, they took over the Star City. The Alrysts met new people who were not like the dead. All their myths about behind the wall had turned into lies. The Nymens got the throne. The throne was made of thousands of sword blades attached to branches of the tree in an irregular manner. They destroyed the wooden throne and rebuilt it. For the second time, the throne was made from two exceptional stones; one is visible in black, the other is invisible in the color of reality which the human eye cannot see. The stones were placed in such a way that the visible stone was on top of the invisible stone. So they made the new viewers wonder how the stone does not fall down from the top. How does it float on air? The Star City was chosen as the capital after the Battle of Swords and Leaves, which was ended by Alvess vent Highwill. Olyns the Conqueror conquered all the lands of Vach.

After obtaining the Infinity Sword and conquering all of Poorvios, he built the throne for the third time. Olyns the Conqueror made the throne with the Infinity Sword for the third time. The throne was made from the twelve rings of the twelve kingdoms of the Vach. The rings stand for the twelve kingdoms of the Vach, which were made with the black visible stones. Those twelve rings became his support and the kings after him. When the middle white light reaches the rings, the center of the rings which made of invisible stones, appears and shows the twelve kingdoms of the Vach. Irence was always on the top, but after the revolution, the rings were replaced by the next ring. He made the seat of the throne with rings like the twelve rings, from all the small areas that were ruled under the great kingdoms. After your grandfather and your father, you are going to sit on it one day. You should know enough about its history, Peter Azberns."

Peter, who was tired of the great Rylord's words, had almost nodded off. He rubbed his eyes. He was trying to keep himself awake. The teacher's head was down. He was walking with the help of

a wooden cane in his hand. The Young students used to joke with that cane and make silly faces. He considered these as their ignorance and stupidity. His had hunchback and he was bent. He was too old; his age almost reached three digits. He was considered to be the oldest man in the Paradise. The remaining hair on his head was pure white. The skin on his face was wrinkled and there were deep lines in it. Other masters were trained under his supervision and consider him as their great Rylord. The gold pin attached to his chest was only his merit. It distinguished him from other Rylords who wore silver and iron pins. There was a lot of information in his mind and he knew about many things. He was busy talking about the great history of the Infinity Throne and he didn't notice that Peter wasn't paying any attention to what he was saying. Peter leaned back in his chair, his eyes were opened and closed occasionally. After finishing his words, the great Rylord stood in front of him. "What are you doing?" he asked with the same seriousness as always that he was frowning.

Peter was brought back to full consciousness by

the loud voice of the great Rylord. He got himself together, then looked briefly into his angry eyes. "I'm listening, Rylord Ward."
"Shouldn't I do the same thing?" He thought to himself and said again
Rylord Ward came closer. Peter could see his master's insignia which was golden like his hair, approaching his face. "Really?" Rylord frowned and said. "Were you listening?"
He moved a little away from him. "I don't mean to be rude, but what you're saying doesn't matter at all," Peter said boldly.
Rylord Ward's voice came to his ears like a sharp sword. "It doesn't matter! You know, I have to tell this lesson especially for you; because you're going to sit on that damn throne one day. You see all those students! All of them are going to become the heirs of the castle, land and titles after their father, and you will rule over all of them one day."
"That day will never come. Why should we waste our time listening to this nonsense story? The Final day will come in a few years and the Frost will come. When it comes, there will be no

human left to live, let alone rule!"
"The final day!"
Rylord laughed for the first time in front of Peter; it seemed like a ridiculous joke to him. He always spoke seriously and in a special tone. The smile didn't exist on his face. It had been many years since the last time he had laughed. But it was different now. Rylord Ward said after laughing: "The Final day! Do you think it's true, son? It's just a fake story to scare people and..."
"Yeah, fake story. Everyone thought Two-Faced walkers was also fake, now look, that fake story destroyed the Seven Kingdoms of the Vach." Peter interrupted.
"Listen, I'm not here to argue with you about true or false stories. These things that I am saying are written on the books correctly by reliable people and left in history. Man cannot build his own future and his land based on a story, true or false. He should step forward to see what the future has in store for him."
"But that doesn't explain why I have to learn these things?"
Rylord Ward put his hand on the future king's

shoulder. "It is my duty to increase your information compared to the others. I believe you understand this, young Peter."
Peter looked away. Master's words danced in front of his eyes. He looked again into the eyes of the Great Rylord. "Yes you are right."
"Teaching to you finished today. You can return home in a few days. Send my regards to your king, Richard Azberns, for the ceremony of golden rule"
"Sure."
Peter came out of the tower of education. He sat on the first steps of it. The world shut down in his eyes. Blackness covered the entire education tower and the Silverown. Everything became dark in front of his eyes. He spent a few minutes in the dark and said to himself: "The middle white has come."
The middle white spread its white light like a garment on the ground, it had made the whole ground white like itself. The black shadows of the buildings, which fell on each other, disappeared with the arrival of the middle white. Peter looked again at the shadow that was in front of him a few

minutes ago. The shadow was gone. The middle white had destroyed all the shadows on the ground. Peter remembered the stories he had heard about the middle white. Some people said: In the middle white, the sound of birds changes and they can imitate the sound of another animal. If all the crows in the world make the sound of the roar of lion, the whole world will tremble. He knew these stories were suitable for his twin brothers, not for himself, who was old enough to understand what made more sense; and Peter did not believe this wrong logic.

He got up. He took light steps on the ground where the white light had reached. He was tired of Rylord Ward's words. On the other hand, he was happy, because the teaching and training was finally over and he was relieved after three years. He remembered home, he thought of Skyglass: those big blue glasses that covered the whole palace. The entire outer covering of Sky Glass, from the walls to the windows of the towers, or even the glass of his room were light blue in color. In the last winter, there was a hailstorm where the small snowflakes hit the windows

directly, but the windows didn’t even get a scratch. He imagined the tiny grains of ice in a different way. When the Final day comes, the ice grains will become the biggest and sharpest form of it and will destroy all the glass to the last piece. Peter didn't want to indulge himself, but the Final day was close, closer than he what thought.

At the bottom of the Tower of Education, a little further on, there was the tomb of the Rkings' ancestor, Regulus. A large garden was built around it. The resting place and residences of new student were located a thousand steps away from it. The green grass had grown tall and needed grooming. There were gardens of red, blue, purple, yellow and white flowers growing around it, on which butterflies were flying beautifully. The annoying bees were buzzing next to them. In the hot summer days, insects of various kinds were seen around that garden. The trees on both sides were equally placed together in the best way. Their leaves were turning green and showing off their beauty. In the center of the garden, they built a circular pool surrounded by oak trees. There was a wooden bench next to the

pool. Peter sat on it and watched the pool. The pool water had turned white due to the middle white light. He picked up a stone from the ground and threw it into the pool. Immediately after hitting the water, the stone made a small wave. It seemed interesting for a moment. He wanted to be stuck in this moment forever. "Why did you tell my servant that you wanted to meet me after training next to the pool at the tomb of the Great Regulus in the middle white?"
Peter smiled. "Because I wanted to see you!"
"What? What does it mean? What do you mean by that?"
"You knew how beautiful you became! Your blue-black hair is so harmonious together, even the middle white can't cover this beauty. Your face is peaceful Just like seashells. See your eyes! They sparkle like two blue marbles through your black eyelashes. Your lips, I can't even imagine; and of course your clothes, they are wonderful..."
Peter paused for a second before the next word. "And spectacular."
"Is it over?"
"Yes, but I have a question. Why do Rkings have

this color hair? Ours is golden; because we are the descendants of the exceptional sons of Olyns the conqueror, but what about you? You are not exceptional... of course you are, but not in the way I am talking about."
Peter laughed a little and said again: "When you are born, do they force you to color your hair to be distinguished from other families? Of course I don't want to be rude, my princess, I just asked."
"What? No, why should we do that? It is the same color when we are born with. Do you think that only you, exceptional people, your hair grow with a certain color when you are born? If you studied our history a little, you would understand why."
"No, don't get me wrong, it's not just the Azbernsian. Retigans have silver hair and Taleskis have red hair. Did you also know that our blood is different from other people's blood? Ours is purple, touched by the Infinity sword, do you want to see?"
"Just finish it. Not all of us are as lucky as you to be Azberns."
"Okay, okay, but don't you want to say why?"

"What?"
Peter touched his golden hair. "Hair color..."
Imotry Rking sat down on the bench next to Peter and explained: "It goes back to a long time ago, at least fifty years after the creation of Paradise, if I'm not mistaken. When the young king laid ill and the others thought he was going to die, the doctor prescribed a special medicine for him. After taking the medicine, the king cured completely. When the king asks the doctor what the medicine was, the doctor explains that he has added a little blue substance inside the medicine, which is used to strengthen the soil. The power of the medicine was so high that it quickly cured the king within two days. After that, the children born from his generation have black hair with blue streaks; like me."
"Wow!" said Peter, amazed." You should teach instead of Rylord. You have a very nice voice. I bet nobody falls asleep in your class."
"Do you think everything is a joke to you?"
"When you talk seriously, your face becomes interesting."
"Oh my God, Peter!"

"What?"
"Why did you want to see me?"
"Ah! About that, actually..."
He got up from the bench, stood next to the pool, and continued, "I wanted to talk about that big plan of ours." he turned his face.
"That's not possible," Imotry replied firmly.
"Why?" Peter wondered.
Imotry got up. "Why? I am Imotry Rking, the princess of Paradise. I have responsibilities towards my family that I must fulfill. Do you know what that means? I can't travel with you around the world."
"What responsibility exactly? Your father finally gives you to one of the lords in the Paradise to keep the alliance and all you can do for him is to keep your father happy. As far as I know, you would do it; because you have to do it, your life..."
"That's not true."
"You know it is. Tell me, which of them have ever proposed, huh? Fat Lord Hardford or the one whose name I don't remember at all. Listen to me, Imotry. When the Ice comes in the next few

years, it will destroy everything. Those big ices, which are as big as an elephant and as sharp as steel of Swordwin will crush and finally will destroy everything. On that day, you will miss these past days that will never come back. But before the Final day, I can take you to other lands. To the old Poorvios, to the Middle Sea, which divided the two landmasses like a snake, or even the legendary lands that are said have sunk under the water. We can go there..."
"What should we do?" Imotry said calmly.
"We live until the Final day."

Chapter 5
Azberns
The Eternal rule

Henry Azberns had been sitting on the chair for a long time. There was a strange pain in his muscles due to immobility. He straightened himself up, heard the sound of his back bones breaking. He didn't care .He continued to write on oil papers again. He put the pen to the ink. It was inked, and the colorful words were written on the page. The air in the room was sultry. Henry wanted to quickly leave the room and go to the hall after correcting the documents regarding the change or stability of the positions of the people inside the Skyglass Palace and Star City itself for the New Year that had been assigned to him by the king himself. He wanted to go to the ruling hall to put the final seal of the king on them. This task was usually the responsibility of Norris Ritanion, the

King's Sword, but this year, as the King entrusted the Infinity Throne to him, he had decided that his heir would do it. And Norris Ritanion didn't object. Of course, if his son Eric Ritanion still remains in his position as Lord of the Ship. Henry also didn't want to change Eric's position and leave it to someone else. He had a different opinion about the rest of the consultant Lords.
Writing the documents was finished. Henry got up from his chair. He went to the ruling hall with the documents. He passed through the gate and entered the ruling hall. He saw the Infinity throne, it was empty. The sunlight shone on the throne from an open ceiling window, and the shadow of two lions was visible on the floor in the right side of the throne. During the time of the Highwill kings, the shadow of a leaf always was on the ground, but with the change of king after the revolution, it had turned into a raging bull, and now, with the Richard Azberns' rule, it had become two roaring lions. Henry carefully watched the twelve rings that were stacked on top of each other in a whirlwind and S-shaped form. The lower seven rings were cracked, which were

signs of the destruction of the seven kingdoms. The highest ring, the Roarlion Ring, was the Western Land; the place where Henry had grown up, which was also called the forest land. "This is so weird! The Highwills wanted to rule until the Final day, but the infinity throne finally came to the Azbernsian, to the men who deserve it. Today they rule over the five kingdoms, maintain the Union, and most importantly, bring peace to the Civilized Vach. Thanks to King Richard Azberns."

Henry looked around. He saw a man wearing a strange black hat with the symbol of the hammer of justice engraved on it. His eyes were purple color. He wore an indigo jacket with white buttons attached to it and oily pants. It also had a nasty smell that could be smelled even where Henry was. Henry could smell its strong smell. He was the Lord of Law, Lord Thailus. He was also called the Black Hat. Until now, no one had seen him without a hat. No one knows what kind and what color his hair is; because the hat was always on his head. He also spoke in a special tone. He said the words firmly and in a special

tone. He bowed royally when he saw Henry's face. "Why is it weird?" Henry replied.
"Frost and Final day is close. Everyone thought that the Highwills were the last kings of the human's time. But the history has proven that nothing is stable. I hope the Azbernsian are the last, my lord."
"Good point, Lord Thailus. It seems weird for me too! It was you who opened the city gates when the Azberns and Ritanion armies arrived behind the city gates. I never had a chance to ask you why you did this, but now I ask, why?"
“We all knew Mid Sairion Talesky, the young king couldn't remain in power for long and would eventually have to surrender. He was scared when the two armies arrived at the city gates. The fall of the city was certain. I wanted to prevent the massacre of thousands of innocent people by opening the city gates. After taking the city, the young king escaped. He was eventually put behind the black iron bars in Vangardian prison. The rightful king sat on the infinity throne; it happened as it should have, until peace was established. People knew that the throne

should go to Richard Azberns, the rightful king of the Vach. I did what I had to do."
"I wonder, Lord Thailus. What do you want?"
"Peace, my lord."
"Yes, peace is the most beautiful thing. If I remember correctly, you were invited here by the Cruel King, Iryn from Poorvios to be a Law Lord, right?"
"Yes, my lord."
"Why?"
"Because King Iryn..."
"My lord, the king is waiting for you in the Bones Hall." The voice of an elderly man came from the gate
Henry turned to that direction. "We can talk later," he said to Lord Thailus.
"Of course, my lord. It's not good to keep the king waiting."
The Bones Hall was forty feet below the Skyglass. It was as big as the palace itself. It was an eternal place for the forgotten kings of Highwill. The ceiling of the hall was so high that even the sharp eye of the eagle could not see it from below. There were many iron chains hanging down from

the ceiling, as many as the buried kings. A rectangular metal frame was attached to the chains with the names of the kings engraved on it. King Richard Azberns was standing next to a chain and staring at it, waiting for his heir, Henry. The chain attached from the ceiling, which was stretched downwards, glowed in a dazzling purple color. the name of Alvess Vent Highwill was engraved On the rectangular frame, Olyns the Conqueror. The king thought to himself: one day a golden chain will be hung from ceiling and his name will be engraved on the metal frame and he will fall into a deep sleep next to the other kings forever.

Time had turned his golden hair, which once shone as bright as the sun, into snow white. His youthful passion for the war had disappeared and was gone. When Mid Sairion Talesky named himself the new king and sent letters to the all places, from the Iron Chain to Mountain of Conqueror, to swear allegiance to the new king and come to the Skyglass in Star City to kneel; Richard Azberns crushed his fleet in the King's sea after the long winter was over. He called him a

usurper of the rule and condemned him to death. The days of his rule had quickly passed before his eyes. It had made him weak, old, and broken day by day. His sturdy stature was broken, making him appear shorter than in his war days when he rode his famous horse, "Golden Shadow". Lately, his illness had made him even weaker. He could hardly walk. The doctor had advised him to spend the whole winter in absolute rest, but he was not a man to be convinced easily. On one of the snowy days, the guards found him unconscious and lying on the ground in the central courtyard. His sense of sight and hearing was weakened, but he could still use his legs and go to the places he likes. He always came to the Hall of Bones to calm his thoughts. In his opinion, the days of his rule were almost done. Death had been waiting for him for a long time. Now, he was waiting for it to join the Forgotten Kings in the Hall of Bones.

Henry found him in an outfit which upper torso is made of red velvet fabric with large and small yellow stars and a beige leather pants while there was a golden crown on his head. His outfit had a

special harmony. He was standing next to a purple chain. His eyes were dark gray like a mouse. There was a strange smell in the hall. Richard knew very well what the smell was. It was the smell of death! Only death could walk in this hall. After noticing Henry's presence, Richard said thoughtfully: "When I was the King Iryn's sword, I was at the peak of my life; In general, I had everything. I married the woman I loved. She gave birth to two beautiful girls. But all I wanted was to have a son, so God never gave me a son. I considered this as my destiny and continued my life. Your father died seven years after you were born. He was a good man, but his illness and early death didn't give him the chance to raise his sons. I raised you as my son and the next heir to the King's Sword. I taught you everything; Riding, hunting, fighting, living and most importantly ruling. And ruling requires knowing the truths that a king must know. You are going to find out those facts today, my dear Henry. So listen carefully."

Richard raised his hand. He pulled the purple chain with the remaining strength in him. A

strange sound was heard from the floor. A wooden coffin inside a huge stone slab, which was covered with a blue glass, slowly came out from under the ground and was placed on the surface. They went towards it together in the northern part of the hall. Henry looked at it. "Olyns the Conqueror."
"Do you know how he died?"
"He was killed in the Battle of Life."
"How?"
"After a few nights-white-days, he was tired of fighting and went to the top of the last mountain," Henry recounted. “From the top of the mountain, he saw the seven kingdoms engulfed in darkness, blood and fire. Children and women were screaming, people were panicking and running away. The two-faced walkers were marching on the ground with the scary sound of their feet. Their faces could take a person's life. It was difficult or almost impossible to kill them with the chains that they were tied to themselves. Ten soldiers could hardly take down one of them. Their riderless horses ran fast and destroyed houses and castles with their iron and black

hooves. Olyns the Conqueror watched this tragic event for a few minutes and imagined the other cities, castles, territories and lands lost. Cities were destroyed, castles were destroyed, and large territories were lost. Soldiers were easily fell on the ground with the swords linked by fiery chains. With all the strength left in his legs, Olyns the Conqueror passed all the remaining humans across the Red Sea. After coming back, the army was defeated. He brought the last mountain to the middle of the Red Sea with his infinity sword and closed the water way of Hallstreet to Alanthus. He used the infinity sword too much by doing this, his body could not bear all those pressure and fell on the ground. The Infinity Sword shattered into thousands of pieces. Thousands of pieces of it were attached to parts of the mountain so that the remaining strength in the broken pieces would prevent the mountain from falling; in the end, Olyns the conqueror died with honor. The mountain was also named "Mountain of conqueror". If one day the two-faced walkers conquer the Mountain of conqueror, they will have conquered the world."

King Richard slowly opened the coffin's glass cover with his weak, trembling fingers. After opening the cover, he opened the closed stones that had hardened over time with difficulty and opened the wooden coffin. Henry looked inside, it was empty. "You see, it's empty," the king said. "The passage of time has destroyed the body."
The king closed the tomb completely. "It was empty from the first day."
"What do you mean it was empty?"
"Our ancestor Lioneil Ness, the exceptional fourth son of Olyns the Conqueror, who was one of the main commanders of the Battle of Life, tells his children and their children to future children about the fact that the body of Olyns the Conqueror never returned to the capital."
"What do you mean he didn't come back?" Henry asked in surprise.
"He said that the battle of life began on the day when thousands of frozen ships arrived in the Red Sea on the appointed day, along with countless dead. The loser of the war knew what he was getting, life. Olyns the conqueror knew this well. With his exceptional sons, the Infinity Sword, and

the entire army he had assembled from Poorvios and Vach, he set out to fight against the Two-Faced walkers at sea. He wanted to drown them all in the sea, but the battle was dragged into the land of Alanthus. The days were good. In the middle white, the war stopped, but at night, the power of the dead doubled and the battle intensified. The dragons with fire and ice breaths could not affect the war. Ryson Ness's brain was the greatest help in battle, but he also could not use his power for long. Olyns the Conqueror passed like a light through the middle of their army. He ran from one side to the other and destroyed them with his infinity sword. Even Olyns the conqueror, with such a speed that went from north to south in a few moments, could not be at any time and place to save everyone. Soldiers were dying in front of his eyes; while he was running and trying to save them, they were lost and fell to the ground. Olyns the Conqueror found out that the dead surrounded Ryson Ness. He ran towards his son. Lioneil Ness recounts that moment: My big brother John and I were standing side by side. The King of Eye walked

through his soldiers to Ryson Ness. My father also reached himself quickly. He wanted to take Ryson away from there, when suddenly a wall of ice was created around them. The King of Eye entered the ice wall with his soldiers. Valerios the dragon rider, came above them and was about to destroy the ice wall with his dragon's fire breath, but six ice spears were thrown from the wall towards the ride less dragon. The ice spears cut off the dragon's two wings. The wingless dragon, with blood flowing from it, fell with a loud roar on the dead. Valerios got angry. He went into the wall with the dragon, and destroyed the entire ice wall. He brought the dragon over the King of Eye. The dragon was about to destroy the King of Eye when ice spears were thrown from the sky. Valerios saw the spikes of ice spears from the sky, and threw himself down from the dragon. The dragon fell to the ground after its rider fell. The King of Eye pointed the dragon's head with his sword. Valeros was lying unconscious on the ground. Olyns the Conqueror decided to finish the King of Eye, but as he walked forward, Stoycen was formed under his feet. Stoycen made

him unable to walk anymore. The King of Eye passed very calmly in front of Olyns the Conqueror and reached Ryson Ness. His soldiers pulled his sword out of dragon's head and brought it to him. The King of Eye stood in front of Ryson. The father was screaming and crying not to kill him. His merciless sword tore Ryson Ness' chest in an instant. The father's screams doubled, but he couldn't do anything. Valerios got up with a bloody head and walked towards the King of Eye. He couldn't keep his balance when he was walking. Suddenly, the chains were thrown towards him from both sides and locked his hands. The dead had brought him to his knees by pulling the chains. Olyns the Conqueror was still trapped in Stoycen and couldn't move. An ice spear hit the dragon rider's heart from the sky. After hitted by the spear, Valerios gave a loud scream like his dragons. The chains were loosening little by little. The Stoycen finally freed Olyns the Conqueror. Olyns the Conqueror fell to the ground, looked up at the sky, and his tears flowed. The motivation to kill his enemy was gone. His two sons were brutally killed in front of his eyes and

had destroyed him. John ran towards his father. While running, he bumped into a dead and was thrown to the side unconscious. Father got up. This time, he ran towards the King of Eye with all his strength. When he got within an inch of him, something hit him, throw him to the ground, far away, but the King of Eye was unharmed. Olyns the Conqueror had taken a deep wound. He came to me and told me: “My son, take care of John, you are his guardian sword and he is my guardian sword.” Then he ordered me to give the command to withdraw. Father took me and the rest of the people on the ship quickly. We crossed the Red Sea with the defeated soldiers. After we passed, the last mountain was placed in the middle of the Red Sea. We named the last mountain, “the Mountain of conqueror”. The mountain is actually Olyns the Conqueror, who protects us from the two-faced walkers. After the end of the Battle of Life, which ended with the placement of the Mountain of conqueror, the sons of Olyns the Conqueror announced his death and took his empty coffin to the capital. Olyns the Conqueror was buried in the Hall of Bones as the

first King and Conqueror of the Vach. Lioneil Ness never saw his father's death, but he believed that bringing the last mountain had destroyed him.”

Richard moved away from the coffin and stood next to Henry. "Olyns the Conqueror died with honor, but he also lost seven kingdoms. Many people were killed, so he failed."

They went to the chains. Richard pulled another chain. Another coffin came out on that side. Henry read the inscription engraved on the metal frame. "Iryn VI Highwill, called the Cruel King."

Richard went to the place where the coffin came out from the grave. Henry also joined him a while later. “Iryn Highwill, the cruel king and the last King of Highwill. The one who took my most beautiful daughter from me." The king said in a voice full of sorrow.

“But it wasn't him." Richard looked at Henry.

Henry was confused and kept silent. He still couldn't believe the truth about Olyns the Conqueror, is he alive or dead?

"Then, who was it?" he asked.

"The king was already dead before he killed his

son for treason."
“He was dead!” Henry said.
“When King Iryn, his son Rayce and I had gone south to visit Irence, the king had decided to leave the throne to his son Rayce after that trip. Everything changed when the king wanted to talk to his son on top of the gray mountains. The middle white of the second day was setting when I saw the king come down from the mountain alone. When he came to my place, he told me: We must go back to the capital, Rayce has betrayed us! I was shocked, I couldn't believe what I heard. I've known Rayce since I was a kid, he was the best friend and the best man I've ever met. And besides, Rayce was supposed to be the king, what kind of betrayal did he commit? King Iryn had become very serious, more serious than ever. When we got back to the Skyglass, in front of all the knights, kingdom riders, guards, and high lords of the capital, he condemns Rayce to death while he sat on the Infinity Throne. I came forward. “There must be a problem, I can check. Rayce would never do that.” I told him. “Rayce has introduced himself as the new king before my

death. Tell me, Richard Azberns, what do you call it?" The king replied firmly. "You allowed him! Don't you remember?" I told him. "No, I don't remember anything but betrayal. You are my sword, Richard. So be a sword, cut it. Destroy my enemies. If you can't, I'll have to find another sword." The king said with a very serious face. When I saw his face, the words coming out of his mouth, and the things he did; He was not like King Iryn before he went to the top of the Gray Mountains. He had changed. I decided to go and see what happened at the top of the mountain. At night, I galloped to the south with my horse towards the gray mountains. When I got to the top of the mountain, I noticed something."
"What?" Henry asked.
"I found a body. Ha was... the king Iryn… who had been killed. The body was horribly eaten by birds, only his face was visible. At first, I couldn't understand what happened. Then I realized that the man who was currently sitting on the infinity throne came from Multrag."
"What is Multrag?"
He talked about Multrag: "Olyns the Conqueror

was sitting on the Infinity throne one day. A purple light like himself appeared in front of him. He wondered, then he followed the light. The light moved from north to south at its speed. It went to the all 12 Vach Kingdoms, finally it stopped in the Star City. When Olyns the Conqueror saw it, his eyes widened. It was his own light that could walk fast along with the infinity sword. He was the first to come from Multrag. I think someone can come from Multrag who has the Infinity Sword."

“But he didn't have the Infinity Sword, did he?” Henry confirmed.

"No, he didn't. He was brought by someone else who had access to the Infinity Sword.

"Who do you think is?"

"I don’t know. But everyone who was there told him: if the last Highwill dies, the mountain of conqueror will also collapse and the two-faced walkers will destroy the world, forever. When I returned to the capital, Rayce was dead. The king arrested me, he wanted to condemn me to death as well, but I managed to escape with some of the guards. But I couldn't save my daughter. A while

after my escape, by order of the cruel king, my daughter was set on fire in a house on Ice Street. I... you know the story after that, my dear Henry."

"Yes," Henry said quietly.

"Listen, Henry. The Mountain of conqueror will fall into the Red Sea before the Final day, I am sure of that. So pray for the Final day to come sooner; because the only thing that can destroy the dead/walkers is the Final Day.

"What will save us on the Final day?" Henry asked.

"Eternal rule."

Chapter 6
Azberns Dreams

A violet light shined from the west to the east. A bold light covered the sky. It gave a sign of an event. Two golden lions were walking on both sides of it. They were making a roar that would shake the world. She saw himself in the mirror of life. She was surprised, he...

Enaya Azberns woke up. She saw the sun sitting above the blue sky and bringing the day. Her two little twin boys were sleeping next to her like two golden lions. They were only seven years old. Their blond and shiny hair looked like it was made of liquid gold. They had many similarities in appearance; their faces, their sizes, and even their voices were similar. The others could hardly distinguish them from each other. Enaya gently moved her hand over Selios' hair to caress it. She

pulled the white velvet blanket over Felios to see his face. She kissed him on the forehead. The sleeping lion's eyelids opened and closed slowly. Moments later, Felios opened his eyes completely. He turned next to his mother and said, "Mom."
Still caressing him, Enaya moved her hands over his curly, shiny, and golden polished hair. “Wake your brother up. Today we have to go to the temple to pray for the grandfather."
The weather was cloudy and gray in color. As the sun hid among the clouds, a cool wind blew from the north, waving Enaya's golden hair in the air. The twins were playing with each other on the steps of the temple. Enaya was standing by the temple gate and was about to left the temple. The guards had placed a palanquin right in front of the temple. Sir Thomas Neel is a handsome young knight with brown hair which could be seen as dark gray under the sky. He tied his long hair behind his head. His eyes were dark blue. He was wearing polished golden armor that didn't even have a scratch, apparently, he had never used that armor in the war and it had the meaning of a ceremonial dress to him. That's why he kept it

clean. Two golden lions facing each other were engraved on it. He was standing next to the palanquin. He opened the door of the palanquin when he saw Enaya, but Enaya ordered: "We will walk to the Skyglass."
Sir Thomas Neel stepped forward. "Your Highness, it's a long way to Skyglass and..."
Enaya stopped his words. "Cousin, I said we will walk."
"Yes, Your Highness."
Servants picked up the light empty palanquin from the ground and followed them. The streets of the city seemed very busy before their arrival, but now it was rare to see anyone. The city was lost in its own silence. It seemed very strange. Enaya was surprised, looking around with curious eyes. The silence of the city streets had gradually become scary for her. Suddenly a man appeared in front of them. A dirty man with torn clothes that even the previous stitches on his clothes had been ripped out again. His feet were bare and black with dirt. He smelled so bad that it was obvious he had not taken a bath in a decade. His hair was disheveled and full of lice. The remaining teeth in

his mouth were yellow and damaged. His face was filled with anger and hatred. Another person was found next to him. Another woman joined them. It didn't take long that their number increased and reached seventy people. "What do you want, beggars?" Sir Kroy Aven said with a sullen and bored expression.

The smelly front man took a few steps forward. "Where is the king's justice?"

When he was talking, his voice was a little loud and his saliva was thrown out while he was talking. "We are starving; we have nothing to eat."

He pointed to a woman and continued: "Do you see that woman? Her son was hungry for several days and had nothing to eat. She had to kill her child in her arms; while you are living comfortably in your glorious palace. And the king doesn't care about us either."

"My father, the king brought peace to our country and I am sure that...." Enaya said.

The man spat on the ground and said, "Keep the peace for yourself!"

Sir Kroy Aven drew his sword from its scabbard,

threw it at the beggar man. The sword hit his head. The man fell with his mouth open and his head split open. "I cannot bear insulting you and the king," Sir Kroy Aven said.
"What are you doing? We do not kill our people!" Enaya raised her voice.
The twins were scared and hid behind the guards. Another man removed the sword from the dead man's head and said, "You will pay for this."
"And how?" Sir Kroy chuckled.
The man raised his hands. A large number of people approached them from the end of the street behind Enaya and the guards. "Like this!" The man said.
Sir Kroy saw behind him and thought to himself, there was nothing there but crazy people who had lost their minds; but the longer he waited, he couldn't believe what he saw. The doors of the houses were opened, and people came out of the houses with clubs in their hands and joined the others. There were too many of them. They were walking side by side in such a way that there was no distance between them and they filled the entire street. Angry people were approaching

them from both sides. Enaya was caught between them along with her twins, guards of palanquin, and servants. "Escort the lady with the twins to the Skyglass." Sir Kroy ordered the rest of the guards.
"How?" replied one of the guards who was horrified.
"Hurry up!" he shouted.
The servants were scared and left the palanquin on the ground. There was no way out, so they ran forward. The obstacle that was behind them was also in front of them. They went to angry people with stress. "We are servants, we are like you, and we just follow the orders, that's all." They cried and begged.
"All my life I've hated everyone who followed orders." said an old man with black and white hair.
People surrounded the servants. The angle of vision was closed for Enaya. She couldn't see what was happening. She was shocked and there was nothing she could do. The fear and trembling in her body made her speechless. She tried to move her lips, but the screams had silenced her. With all

the courage that was left in her, she uttered the words half-completely: "I swear... swear... I swear..."
"I swear, in the name of the king, all these problems will be solved;" She raised her voice. "If you let me and my men return safely to the Skyglass, everything will be fine."
"It's too late, I hope God will help you." The beggar man laughed.
"Help…help…." The screams and shouts were raised.
The guards were slowly walking back with Enaya and the twins. There was no other way. The only ways to run were in the front and back, which were closed. The screeches stopped. Enaya saw a terrible, disturbing and indescribable scene. Servants' hands and feet were cut off, the street was covered in blood, the eyes were put out and the ears were raised in the sky by people who were shouting. One of them had cut open the body of one of the servants with a knife in his hand and removed his intestines. "We want this!" He stood up and shouted.
Two little lions were crying. They didn't know

what would happen to them. They hid themselves among the guards. "Today I think you should make the most of that ridiculous golden armor of yours." Sir Kroy said to Enaya's cousin, Sir Thomas. "Those beggars are getting closer to us each moment. We open the way forward, you should get to the Skyglass quickly with the Lady and the twins. Go as fast as you can and don't look back, understand it?"

Sir Thomas was sweating and his hands were shaking. "Okay." he replied.

"Are you ready, Your Highness?" Sir Thomas said to Enaya.

Enaya took Selios in her arms, and Sir Thomas took Felios as well. The guards held the swords firmly and ran forward. By killing a few people, they opened a small hole between them. Enaya and Sir Thomas made the most of the opportunity and ran away from them. They ran towards the Skyglass at the speed that Sir Kroy had told them to. "Get them, they're running away!" an old man shouted.

They reached Dragon Street breathlessly. People followed them with screams. Enaya entered an

alley. She felt that Sir Thomas was not by her side, so she stopped. She looked around, there was no one there. She swallowed her saliva. She wanted to put Selios, who was tightly in her arms, on the ground and go to the end of the alley to see what happened, but Selios didn't let her. His eyes were closed and he was begging his mother not to separate from him. Enaya couldn't satisfy him either. She went to the end of the alley with his son with light steps. She saw Sir Thomas standing behind the wall where Felios was sitting, and people were approaching them angrily. Sir Thomas' sword was still clean and not stained with blood. Four people came forward with clubs. Sir Thomas bravely killed them all one by one. But the next time not just four people come, People suddenly rushed over him. Sir Thomas no longer knew which way to take the blade of the sword. He was confused. He fell to the ground with the rush of people. People kicked him with their feet. It didn't take long before they killed him in the most tragic way possible. A woman who had killed her starved son in her arms came to Felios, who was sheltering behind the wall. She

took his hand, lifted him up, and held him in front of herself at a distance away from Enaya. "Don't do it..." Enaya begged.
The woman showed Felios's face to his mother for the last time, then turned him back to her side. She gently hugged Felios, then she brutally plunged the knife into the innocent child's chest. With the knife left in his chest, Felios distanced himself from her and looked at his mother. Enaya saw the blood coming out of his child's mouth and screamed. Felios fell on the ground after a moment. Enaya's tears flowed down her cheeks as her son fell to the ground. The woman giggled. Enaya saw her son's face hitting the ground many times in her mind. She held Selios tightly, staring at that direction. She wanted to take the dead body of her child, but she knew that she would also lose her other child, so she ran away. The hungry people didn't let her go until they killed her and Selios, too. She was crying and running. As her head was down, she didn't notice that her leg was stuck somewhere. She hit the ground hardly. Selios fell from her arms. She fell to another side. Her head hit a hard rock and her

forehead was covered in blood. Selios was also trying to get close to his mother. He got up. The little lion smiled at his mother. A moment later, the beautiful smile turned into a bloody smile. Something hit him on the back and he was about to fall in front of his mother but Enaya reached and took him. Enaya saw the sword that hit his back. She took her little golden lion. His body was relaxed, his eyes were closed. Enaya didn't want to believe his death after the death of Felios. She put her head on his head and sang a song. A man approached him. Enaya closed her eyes like her son and sings. The beggar man raised the sword he had taken from the dead guards above Enaya's head. Enaya raised her head. She saw the sword coming closer to her, closer and closer...

When she woke up for the second time, she saw the sunlight hitting her eyes like a sword blade. She became flustered. She remembered her nightmare and looked for her twins. They were not there! "Guards!" she shouted.

" Your Highness, what happened?" A maid entered her room and asked.

"Where are my boys?"

"Come to the window so I can show you, Your Highness." the maid said.
Enaya rushed to the window. She saw outside. The twins stood on both side of the statue of Olyns the Conqueror. The painter was painting them on paper. He complained to the twins not to move. The statue of Olyns the Conqueror was made of polished stone in gray color. The statue was larger than the actual size of the Olyns the Conqueror. Two green rubies were used instead of his eyes. His long beard and mustache were beautifully engraved. Olyns the Conqueror was holding a sword vertically with both hands and standing. Some people said that this is the infinity sword, but the stone cutter, who had never seen the infinity sword, made an imaginary sword with the help of his mind. Enaya calmed down as she saw them. "Did you have a bad dream, Your Highness?" The maid said.
"Yes, the scariest nightmare I've ever had in my life."
"Today is a big day for your husband, you should get ready."
“What a great day?” Enaya wondered. "Did

something happen to Henry?"
"Today is his coronation day."
Enaya had completely forgotten that because of the stress. "Yeah...yeah...you're right."
The Skyglass was preparing itself for the early days of summer. Its shiny blue glass was being cleaned by the workers who were on top of the wooden scaffolding. It was a dangerous job; Due to the negligence of some workers, several people had fallen down and had reddened the ground with their hot blood. Henry had insisted that careful and experienced workers should be used in these dangerous jobs, because negligence would cause a lot of human and financial losses. The heat had woken up from its hibernation. With its coming again, it would give the good news of summer and put an end to the cold and long winter.
Enaya went to the painter. He was a master painter. His clothes were filled with nature patterns. His hair was dark brown and its style looked strange, it was like a watermelon on his head. He stroked His mustache every few minutes and played with it. He had said that this could

help him concentrate more and considers all the angles of drawing. He had come here from Poorvios at the king's request to paint him with his family. His name was Quiller. He bowed when he saw Enaya. "How much is left, Painter Quiller?" Enaya asked.

"It's almost done, Your Highness." The painter, who was drawing on the paper with a special delicacy, replied.

The twins were smiling at their mother when the painter's head was down. Enaya had a good feeling. The nightmares were over and she was in the real world now, which was no longer a dream. After finishing the painting, she entered the ruling hall with the twins. The ruling hall was filled with people. The knights with the servants and high-ranked lords were present on one side and some people were on the other side. Enaya also joined the crowd with the twins. They waited for the new king to enter the hall. The darkness of the middle white appeared. The hall fell into complete darkness. In the darkness, Enaya could hear the footsteps. As the middle white dawned, she saw the new King standing beside

the Infinity Throne. The crowd became happy and cheered. The middle white light shone into the stone rings supporting the Infinity Throne, on which the twelve kingdoms of the Vach were carved on the invisible stone, making them visible. Henry was still standing and staring at the crowd.

"I declare in the name of the new king, Henry from House of Azberns, king of the first and new men, lord of the five kingdoms alive and the seven kingdoms dead, the shield of Vach against Multrag, protector of the realm and upholder of the unions." Rylord Grassin said.

Rylord Grassin put a crown of gold on his head. Henry sat on the infinity throne quietly. He saw his wife's eyes staring at him. "May his rule be stable." Rylord said.

The crowd shouted in unison: "May his rule be stable... May his rule be stable..."

Chapter 7
Ritanion
I am the sword of the Unity

“**W**e are all gathered here to congratulate Lord Irvyn Ritanion, Lord of the Sword's Nepp and Warden of the North, a new rule and a new year on this day, especially as it is the seventh and the last day of the Golden rule. My Lord, happy golden rule."

"Also, my lord," Irvyn Ritanion replied.

And the party began. The musicians started playing. The clowns were performing. Servants filled the tables with food. They all congratulated each other on the golden rule. Irvyn was sitting in the front row with Lord Dermot Tallmen, enjoying the final party. The last party had been held in Wolfenber. For the first seven days of each

year, Lord of sword's Nepp would travel to some part of the north and make an honorable presence there to celebrate the Golden rule. Irvyn didn't forget this custom in the New Year either. He tried his best to do the task that his father assigned him well and not to disappoint him. The party had reached its climax. Some people were standing up and dancing. Irvyn saw his cousin, Adgar, sitting quietly in the corner of the hall. He was just a spectator and didn't show any excitement; it was like it was meaningless to him.
"My lord, I found the book you wanted." said Lord Dermot Tallmen to Irvyn, who was staring into the corner of the hall.
"Where did you find it?"
"Right around here in Wolfenber. A man who lives in a farm nearby has kept the book. According to that person, the book was written by his ancestors. The content of this book is the words of the first heir of the Infinity Sword, or the Purple Eyed Hero.
"Where's the book?"
"I brought the book here with me."
"Okay, I really want to see what's inside."

Irvyn returned to his room with the book. The party was still going on and the sound could be heard in Irvyn's room. He sat on a chair. The light black shadows on the cover of the book were constantly getting bigger and smaller, even the words were shown big and small. There were three yellow candles, one on the right, the other on the left, and the last one in front of the book that Irvyn had placed on the table. They had created a dazzling light. Irvyn always lit three candles before going to bed and read until they went out. He had calculated that the melting time of the candles is as long as half of the middle white; That is, he read at night as much as half of the middle white, but tonight was different. The book he put on the table was not an ordinary book about the past events of the last few years of the Vach or the sworn swords of the Loyalty Brothers or the Way of Kings or the famous knights of the era of Olyns the Conqueror or the history of ten influential people in the world; Rather, it was the words of the first heir of the Infinity Sword, who is said to be the one who single-handedly defeated all the two-faced

walkers. Irvyn read on the cover: "Time and the First Heir."
He opened the book. It was seen on the pages of the book that had become dusty due to the passage of time. Irvyn blew them so he could read the words. He read the first title: "Time and its quasi-times"
He turned to the next page to read what was written about that title. He moved his fingers between the words and whispered them: "Time is the greatest characteristic of the life of all living beings, which a certain period of life has been determined for everyone. The original time is one of the most perfect ones, which has many pseudo-times. Time is moving in a straight line like a black line and we all live in the present. Next to this black colored line, there are many invisible and white lines that we call pseudo-times of the original time. Our world is in one of these pseudo-times. The first heir has traveled to two of the pseudo-times that are neighboring our own pseudo-times. The first pseudo-times he traveled is called the Seven Lights. When the first heir told me about it, I was very eager, excited and curious.

I looked into his mouth to hear what wonderful things he was telling about that pseudo-times. The Seven lights are made of seven lights that appear in the sky for a whole day. Since for us only three lights appear in our sky, seven colored lights appeared in the sky after a few hours for them, the first of them is the sun and the last one is the moonlight. Between them, five lights with green, red, purple, brown and blue colors, which I can't remember the order, act in the sky like the middle white and make the earth like their light. "
Irvyn, who got a little tired and read the sentences quickly, did not know whether it was real or a myth. Whatever, it seemed interesting to him; it didn't matter what he called it, he just kept reading. He imagined himself in the world of the Seven Lights. It looked beautiful and a little weird. He reached the last page of the book. He looked at the last page and read it: "The first heir wanted to do things to change the situation and..."
Knock... knock... knock... knock... knock... Irvyn suddenly woke up. He realized that he had fallen asleep on the book while it remained open. He

opened and closed his eyes when he saw the golden sunlight from the window. The door rang again. Knock...knock...he closed the book, went to the door and opened it. Adgar entered. His face was simple and pleasant. His hair was black as night. Unlike the most of Ritanions, he was not tall. His rat skin gloves were bloody, he took them off and placed them on the table. "I'm sorry, were you asleep?"
"If you would let me, yes."
"Do you want me to come back another time, cousin?"
Irvyn stepped away from the door, went to the window, and said: "Your bloody gloves show you're coming back from a hunt."
"Yes, but something terrible has happened."
Irvyn became eager. "What happened?" he turned and asked.
"Last night, a house by the river caught fire and all the family members were burned alive, except for the little son."
"Why?" Irvyn asked in surprise.
"Guess who set that house on fire."
"Lord Ben Selwyn"

The black ashes were floating in the air and rolling on top of each other, the sunlight showed them in the detail. The ashes were moved delicately by going between them. All the tables, chairs and wooden furniture were burned. The body of the walls also became black. The fire had spread to all corners of the house. Of the remaining books, only their covers remained half intact. All the pages were destroyed one by one and they fell on the ground. It is said that the door was closed from the outside during the fire. All the people of the village, which numbered several hundreds, were just watching. The only sound they could hear was Scott's screams along with his wife and little daughter. After the fire was over, when they opened the door, they saw a heartbreaking, painful and sad scene. Parents were holding their little child in their arms. They were sitting in a corner to be safe from the burning flames, but all three of them were in the arms of death and experienced a cruel death.

With his leather glove, Irvyn gently moved his index finger on the table so a horizontal trail of ashes was erased on the burnt table. He took light

steps. He saw the whole house. He closed his eyes for a while. He visualized that horrible event in his imagination. It was very annoying. The orange-red flames spread from one side to another and destroyed their surroundings like an awakened monster. He opened his eyes, He no longer wanted to feel the depth of the disaster. "Why did he do this?" he asked.

"The house that Scott lived in belonged to Lord Selwyn, and so did the land he farmed," replied Scott's neighbor, who was by his side. “Before the accident, they had agreed that Scott would buy the land and the house. Scott had collected the agreed payment and had taken it with him to the castle in White fear. Lord Selwyn had told him that I was not in full consciousness at the time, and that the actual cost was double. If you can't pay, I have to sell that house along with the lands to someone else. You only have two days to bring me the money. I take this money as a gift. Scott returned home after the argument. A few days later, Lord Selwyn came here with his men. We saw the fire. We thought it was sudden and wanted to help, but Lord Selwyn with his men

prevented us. He said this is the fate of one who betrayed me!
"Where's the boy?" Irvyn asked.
"He's at my house," Scott's neighbor replied.
"The boy is going back to the Sword's Nepp with us. He lives there until he grows up. When he reaches a sufficient age, all his father's property will be given to him.
"Whatever you wish, my lord," the man bowed.
Irvyn looked up at the ceiling and ordered his men: "Get some people from the Sword's Nepp and rebuild the house. When the storm comes, the house will uprooted like a light bush."
Irvyn left the house. "Send a letter to the White fear and tell Lord Ben Selwyn to come to Sword's Nepp within two days," he ordered his steward, who was standing by Adgar's side. "If he is late, I will have to do the thing I don't like."
"I will do quickly, my lord." Steward Olsen replied.
Adgar brought Irvyn's horse to his side. Both of them mounted the horse. "What do you want to do?" he asked.
Irvyn was looking at the outside wall of the house

where the house of Selwyn banner of "a man on fire with a white background" was hanging. It was very mysterious and scary. "Lord Selwyn is the beast he was" he answered. "If you don't change once, you will never change. He still enjoys burning people alive. My father had warned him many times, but this time he must face the consequences."

Irvyn didn't like Lord Selwyn. Since the house of Selwyn was considered one of the biggest families in the north, he had to not deal harshly with him, or at least he hoped that nothing bad would happen. Norris had held the entire north with one hand. When he was in the north, no one dared to disobey him. Most of the northerners were hot-tempered, angry and single-minded people. And Lord Selwyn was the last person that Irvyn wanted to argue with. The sky became cloudy and was preparing itself for its third light, the middle white. A cold wind was blowing from the Mountain of conqueror and kept the north cool. A dozen horsemen were riding behind him. Next to him was Adgar. The commander of the guards, Ritter Mars, positioned his horse in line with

Irvyn's horse. His hair was as white as his teeth, but his beard was still young and dark. It had been many years since the last time he was with Norris Ritanion, fighting for Richard Azberns to conquer the Five Kingdoms. But now he has to be by his eldest son's side and be his protector. "My lord, do you go through the Night woods or go cross the river?" he asked in a very respectful tone.
"We're going from the Night woods. I want to visit my old friend."
The Night Woods is full of trees that are as tall as the sky which you can't see above them with naked eye. With the arrival of summer, their branches and leaves were dressed in green, and they took off their white winter clothes and took their usual beautiful appearance. Its refreshing smell attracted people to its beautiful nature. Many nightingales filled the forest with their passionate and refreshing songs. The beauty of the forest was indescribable for Irvyn. Unfortunately, there was only one forest in the north, and it was far away from Sword's Nepp. He had made a garden in the Sword's Nepp to calm his thoughts, where he sometimes went. But the Night Woods

was something else compared to his garden, it was real nature! They stopped next to a wooden house. The house was made of brown wood. It was a strong refuge for the retired knight, Sir Eamon Allbin, known to most of the northerners as a Rylord, fighter, shipbuilder and forest ranger. His home was in the heart of the Night Woods. Irvyn dismounted from his horse. He took off his gloves. He was about to knock on the door when it suddenly opened. A hairy man whom his entire head and face was covered in hair came out, it was like he hadn't taken a bath and shaved his face in a year. He was wearing a thick and big black dress and he smelled badly. he was excited as he saw Irvyn. "Little Lord!"

He hugged Irvyn tightly. "I've not seen you for years! Were you busy building a ship that you don't visit your Lord, or did you forget us completely?" Irvyn asked.

Sir Eamon let him go. "I was building a ship for the North."

He pointed his hand towards him. "And for you."

"Why don't you live in the capital?" Irvyn asked. "I'm sure it's very easy for you there."

"I can't. I lost my son after defeating the young king, Mid Sairion Talesky. My wife also died after hearing about his death. I could not stay in that damn city for a moment. After the coronation of Richard Azberns, your father insisted that I stay with him and serve as the ship's master in the Skyglass, but I belonged to the North, not to the Star City. Recently, I heard that your brother Eric has become the ship's master."
"Yeah, Eric would like to live in the capital with father."
"How stupid I am! Come inside so I can prepare a drink for you and your people."
They all entered the house. It seemed a big house for one person. A large black teapot was placed on the fire. Sir Eamon put some sticks under it so that the flames would increase. He looked at Adgar. "Who is he?"
"My cousin," Irvyn answered.
"Your father was a very good man." Sir Eamon said to Adgar. "Too bad he died young. I remember him very well. He and I used to fight side by side in battles. He would break the enemy's shield into several pieces with his heavy

ax. The illness took him down very quickly and. He had blue eyes, a big and strong body that could easily lift a man with his hands, but you didn't take after him, you're too small."
"Not all sons take after their fathers," Adgar replied.
"Yeah, that's right. Your looks and appearance didn't take after him, but I hope your courage would take after him."
"Sure it is." Irvyn said.
Irvyn's men gathered around the center table. Sir Eamon took the black teapot from the fire and poured it into the cups he had prepared on the table. At the time of pouring, warm steam would come out of it, which was like human breath in cold weather. Every time Irvyn drank tea, he blew it to cool it down a little and not burn his tongue. Sir Eamon sat on the chair next to him. "Alright, tell me. Are you not married yet? Your father is very eager to see your children."
Irvyn was a little embarrassed. He put the glass on the table. "I have many responsibilities to attend to. I think marriage is the last thing I should think about these days."

"Or you haven't found a right girl yet?"
"My father insists that I marry one of the girls of the court; because they are more suitable, but..."
In a moment, the house became dark. Everything went dark in front of his eyes. Irvyn couldn’t see anything. The sun was gone. A few minutes later, a white light appeared in the sky, replacing the darkness and lighting up the house. "The middle white has come, I must return to the Sword's Nepp." Irvyn said.
The second day came. Irvyn had arrived at the gate of the Sword's Nepp. The sound of summer birds was everywhere in the castle, even it could be hear from outside the castle and made the pleasant morning more beautiful. Irvyn didn't want to ruin this beautiful morning. The flag of House of Ritanion hung from the walls of Sword's Nepp. "Three horizontal swords on top of each other in a sky blue background" was emblazoned. The castle looked like a sword from the outside. Nepp Ritanion had made a big silver sword in the middle of the castle. The tip of the sword reached the ground, behind where the throne was built. There was a big tower around the sword that

reached up to the hilt. Next to the hilt of the sword was a large porch from where he could see the entire castle. The only way to it was through the tower, where only the Ritanions lived. Irvyn entered the castle with his men. When he dismounted, he found that Lord Selwyn had entered the castle before him. He saw men holding his flags in the yard. He looked at porch by the hilt of the great sword. He wanted to throw Lord Selwyn down from there. He reconsidered and entered the great hall. Lord Selwyn, who was sitting in a chair, did not move when he saw him. "It's very rude to keep a lord waiting. I think your father, or your Rylord, or who the hell he is, taught you this, boy." he said.
Lord Selwyn was a stout man. Everyone said that his tongue is like the bite of a snake. His pride was known to everyone in the north. His long beard was brown, which red streaks could be seen in the middle of it. Irvyn sat on a chair made of granite stones behind the tip of the sword. "Accept my apology, my lord."
"Why am I here?" Lord Selwyn stood up.
"From the last time I can remember, my father

had nothing to do with burning your dead, but…." He raised his voice a little, "But burning a man with his family! I am very sure that it was forbidden."
"The value of that house and that land was worth their lives, since they had no money to pay, I thought that by setting them on fire, their debt would be paid, and it was. I hold no grudge against Scott now. Now he can keep both of them for himself."
He came a little closer. "But the dead can't own anything, can they? They can only have a nice place to rest, but as far as I can remember, they even can't get that, either; because they are nothing but ashes that move in the air and remain for a short time, then they disappear forever. So we conclude that those lands will return to the original owner, the person who can be their real owner. And of course, he hasn't turned into ashes, either!" he mockingly said.
Irvyn got up from his chair with anger seeping through his facial muscles. "The law of God and men dictates that right now, right here, I will strike your neck for violating the laws of the

North and the Vach."
"What law, boy?" Lord Selwyn shouted.
"We are not savages who burn each other alive for a few lands. We are civilized people. We act according to the rules, and those rules are simple and clear."
"You can play by those rules, boy. I have a lot to do."
Lord Selwyn turned his face, he was about to leave the hall, when Irvyn said: "I think you misunderstood my words, Lord Selwyn."
Lord Selwyn stood up. "If I want to get it, you want to kill me?"
He laughed and continued: "I believe that your father didn't give you such an order. You don't do anything until your father says, you know why? Because you are your daddy's boy and you are nothing without your father."
"All right, do you think my guards are going to listen to a man thousands of miles away or a man just a few steps away?" Irvyn said. "Make him kneel." Irvyn ordered.
Adgar and several others drew their swords. They all pointed their swords at him. Ritter Mars

brought his sword close to his throat. "Get on your knees!"
"I never..." Lord Selwyn said.
Adgar hit his legs hardly from behind. Lord Selwyn's legs gave way and he fell to the ground. He shouted and said a curse. Ritter Mars hit him with the back of his sword to shut him up. Irvyn ordered one of the guards to aim an arrow at his corrupt heart. He came to him and said: "If I point with my right hand, the arrow will pierce your heart. If I point with my left hand, the sword will cut your head off. Then you will see whose words are implemented in the north. Tell me, which one are you more comfortable with, the arrow or the sword? Make up your mind quickly, we don't have all day, Lord Selwyn."
Irvyn sat on a stone and stared into his eyes. Lord Selwyn felt remorse when he saw the pressure from all sides. "Forgive me, my lord. I made a mistake, it won't happen again, I promise."
Irvyn stood up. He took out his sword from its scabbard. He hit the ground a few inches away in front of Lord Selwyn's eyes. "I am the sword of the Unity! All the north should be united." and

shouted.
He sat on his feet facing Lord Selwyn with the sword between them. He continued: "All the people of the north! I forgive you this time because of the services you did for my father and my family. If something like this happens again in the north, I swear to this sword which is between us, that I will kill you. I think your brother would be happy to serve the North in your place as Lord of the White fear."

Chapter 8
Ritanion
Troylo's harbor

Troylo's harbor was not far from the Mountain of conqueror. The Mountain of conqueror could be seen well from the harbor. A black shadow cast itself over the harbor, and the mountain continued as far as Adgar Ritanion could watch up to its top. It was noisy and crowded as always. Many ships came to anchor there. Small boats were also seen among them. The largest ship shining in the harbor was the ship with a gilded hull of the House of Talesky, with the flag of "Raging Bull with Golden Horns" emblazoned on its sails, waving in the air. By moving its flag, the wind made it magnificent and distinguished the ship from the other ships. The House of Talesky was the richest and most powerful house in the Five kingdoms. Their ancestor, Squilen Ness, was

called the golden boy, the lucky man and the exceptional second son of Olyns the Conqueror. He had become one of the richest people in the world with a possible earthquake. Their gold mine was considered one of the largest gold mines in the Vach. The ship on the right side had white one-handed sails with brown edges that clearly came from the Angel Islands. It brought spices, cloth, clothes with new designs, various kinds of special cold summer syrups and various toys for children. The ship on the left came from the western land. The flag of the House of Lars, which was a "fish on a yellow background", was clearly visible. The House of Lars was considered one of the flag bearers of the House of Azberns and was one of the largest fish exporters. A small ship was approaching the harbor from a distance. There was no special pattern on its sails. The ship was belong to the prince of the Apple Island, the young Unika, who was traveling around the world with his lover. He was standing with his lover on the deck of the ship. He was holding an apple in his hand and was biting. Adgar was sitting on the chair facing master Yanjy. He had

an angry face and was glaring at him. Master Yanjy, in charge of the port of Troylo, was looking the other side and watching the ships coming. In his fingers, copper, silver and gold coins made a jingling sound when they hit each other. His hair was tied together like a spider's web, and it glossed like an earthy color under the sunlight. One of his eyes was replaced by a white pearl. According to him, he could see invisible white creatures with that eye in the middle white, and he spoke to people about its wonder. He was a chubby and fat man, he also had a narrow nose. His face was trimmed and clean. Master Yanjy said, “My lord, would you like to have a drink? The best summer syrups have just arrived from the Angels Islands. I heard they're the best of the best."

"First, I am not a lord." Adgar replied. "Second, I don't need a drink."

Master Yanjy placed the coins on the table one by one. After that, he looked at Adgar and said, "I mean no offense, my lord...no...no, my lord...I mean...what I want to say is that..."

Adgar cut him off: "Say it!"

"Why are you here?" Master Yanjy finally spoke up, confusedly.
"I think you know very well, Master Yanjy!"
Yanjy took out a large brown bag from his pocket and placed it on the table. He opened them. Shiny gold and silver coins slid out of it and fell on top of each other on the table. He opened another bag, poured the white diamonds next to the coins.
"This is for you." Yanjy said. "You can do many things with it; For example, you can..."
"I can buy another head for you. Maybe the other head is more suitable!"
Adgar pulled out a dagger from his waist. The dagger was made of polished swordwin steel; Even the leather of its scabbard was made of the best material. He took out the dagger from its leather scabbard and placed it on the table. Yanjy panicked a bit. "What's this for?"
"Don't worry, if I want to cut your head off, be sure I won't do it with a dagger, I'll use a big sword; because then, you will feel less pain. Do you understand what I mean?"
Yanjy becam wide-mouthed. "Why do you have to cut off my head?" He asked.

Adgar paused, staring into his white eye. He could see the terror in the whiteness of his eye, which had turned a little black. After a moment, he said: "Okay, actually a rumor in the north has recently reached to Sword's Nepp. They say that our dear people who come from different places to the Troylo's harbor to visit the pleasure city; Since we all know that the pleasure city is the best and most famous city of Vach for fun and entertainment, and merchants buy and sell their desired goods in the city market. The issue here is that our dear people are being unconscious and kidnapped at night by unknown people in a clever and calculated way. After they wake up, they find themselves on a remote island with no clothes on. What an interesting story, isn't it?"
"Yeah, it was an interesting story. But, what does it have to do with me?
"Many complaints have been made to Lord of the Sword's Nepp to this effect. If we want to look at this issue more logically, only one person can manage such people. He obviously needs a ship to fulfill his plan. I know about your past and I know that before you were appointed to this position,

you were busy with stealing in the fields. A thief is always a thief. Of course, you also bought yourself a new ship!"
"I have enough money, why should I do this?" Yanjy replied calmly. "Even if all the evidence is against me, it still doesn't explain why I should do this?"
"Then you deny it?" Adgar said.
"Yes, I deny..."
Adgar quickly grabbed the dagger from the table and hit it on his left hand that was on the table. Yanjy was about to finish his sentence when he moaned and coiled like a snake. "Why did you do that?" he moaned.
Adgar moved the dagger a bit, said loudly: "Enough lying! Do you deny it?"
Red blood was coming out of the side of the dagger like a river. The dagger was still stuck in the back of his hand and Adgar's hand was locked on it. "Please….please," Yanjy said.
"This is the last time I ask you. Do you deny it?"
Yanjy was moaning with tears in his eyes. He was convinced. "Yes….yes....it was me, all of it."
Adgar slowly took the dagger out from Yanjy's

hand. He cleaned it with a white cloth. "You saw how easy it was! There is no need for such violence."
After freeing his hand, Yanjy quickly bandaged it with a cloth to stop the bleeding. His hand was shaking from the pain. He was examining it with his white eye to see how serious it was. "How did you know?" Yanjy said.
"I didn't, Lord Irvyn discovered your ability."
"Of course, he's as brilliant and clever as his father, maybe even more."
A well-dressed man appeared in front of them with a woman. Their hair was brown. They wore yellow clothes with red flowers printed on them. An apple-shaped pin was attached to their chest, which was silver in color. The man was standing like a pillar and the woman next to him was up to his shoulders. The woman saw the condition of the wounded man, her face became upset. "Are you okay, sir?" she said in a special tone.
Adgar didn't take the woman's pitying look seriously. He got up. "He is fine. He was careless and cut his hand..."
He looked at Yanjy and continued, "Didn't you?"

Yanjy, who was holding his hand tightly, saw Adgar's serious look. "Yes, yes, we were just joking that it caused a small wound. It's like a mosquito bite, it will heal soon."
"What a terrible joke! You Northerners are really interesting people." The woman said in surprise.
"Well, what did you want, my lord and my lady?" Adgar asked.
"I am not a lord and this beautiful woman who is by my side is not a lady." The man replied.
The man looked into the woman's eyes. "This is my lover! I am the Prince Unika from the Apple Island. If you know the place well, its rubies are the size of a big apple and of course it has many apple trees. By the way, when I was on the island, I heard from many merchants that the pleasure city of North Vach was worth a visit. So I added the pleasure city of North Vach to the list of places I wanted to visit. Now, here I am, far from home by the city of pleasure. I will give you ten good coins to accompany me and my sweet lover to the pleasure city.
Yanjy, whose pain had taken over his entire being, was surprised. "My prince, this is Adgar

Ritanion, Lord Irvyn Ritanion's cousin, the Lord of the Sword's Nepp and Warden of the North."
Prince Unika regretted what he said and respectfully said: "Accept my apology, my lord. I didn't know that!"
"That's all right." Adgar said. "I'll send someone to escort you to town with your sweet lover."
Prince Unika struck a breaker with his right hand. His servant came with a chest. He placed the chest on the table. When he saw the prince's eyes with a sign of approval, he opened the chest. Inside the chest, there were two big blue rubies that were exactly the size of the apple as he said. Yanjy could completely forget the pain in his hand when he saw it. The prince slowly pushed the chest towards Adgar. "My people, when they make a mistake, they must compensate for their mistake, by giving a gift. This is my gift to you and the house of Ritanion for the disrespect I did. I hope you like it."
"Thank you, my prince." Adgar said. "When my people make a mistake, do you know what they do next?"
"What?" his lover asked curiously.

"They do it again; because the first time doesn't count."
"I can't disagree with that!" Prince Unika laughed. The weather was cloudy. A cold wind was blowing directly from Mountain of conqueror, which made Adgar's hair stand on end. He was sitting in a wooden cabin next to the harbor. He was watching the outside from the window. Yanjy entered the room with a tray full of food. Freshly fried fish, salt, pepper, toasted bread with cherry juice were on the tray. He placed the tray in front of Adgar and sat down on it. He had bandaged his hand with another clean cloth; He still felt the pain down to his bones, but the worry on his face was not because of the pain. Finally, he expressed his concern to Adgar: "Do you want to get me out of the Troylo's harbor?"
Adgar took a small piece of toasted bread and put some fish meat on it. He sprinkled salt and pepper on it. He put the morsel in his mouth and chewed it. He felt to himself that this was the best fish he had ever eaten. Yanjy waited for an answer, but Adgar did not say anything. After taking the third bite, he drank the cherry juice completely. Yanjy

leaned his head forward. "Please tell me." he whispered softly. "I don't feel good, I'm dying of worry."
"Yanjy, if I wanted to do that, I would have done it by now, don't you think so?" Adgar was annoyed. "So let me enjoy my meal and look out that damn window. In short, enjoy this damn moment..."
The sound of something breaking was heard. Yanjy, who was happy to hear the first sentences of Adgar's words, suddenly changed his expression when he heard the sound. Adgar who was struggling with the fork and knife to cut the fish meat, the words he wanted to say got stuck in his throat. For the first second, when he heard the sound, he thought it was nothing important, but as the sound increased and continued, he felt worried. He focused on sound; yes, the voice was coming from the above! Both of them looked up like owls. Their eyes became wider and rounder. Yanjy swallowed. The sound of breaking was getting longer and more terrifying. The rectangular wooden ceiling of the room was cracking from both sides. The cracks reached a

point and the ceiling was separated in a moment. Adgar's dining table was thrown up. Adgar lowered his head so that the broken pieces of wood would not hit him. Yanjy, who was shocked, opened the door of the room in a hurry. The door burst open with tremendous force, hurling towards the man standing in front of it with his head down. The wooden door hit him so hard that the sound of his bones breaking came into the room. Adgar was confused and thought to himself: Oh my God, this is probably the Final day! He looked at the sky, there was no sign of middle white or the darkness before it. The sky was darkened with black clouds. The cold weather had become like a storm. At a distance of two hundred yards, the ground was cracking and it was destroying the houses and buildings near the harbor. He saw the destruction of the stone walls and their sudden collision with the people in front of his eyes. The people of the harbor were panicked. Each of them ran away. "Save yourselves." Someone shouted. "Run to the city." Another said: "This is definitely the Final day or the signs of its coming!"

A child was sitting in a corner and crying. His parents were running towards him screaming. Five frightened men got out of a house that was being destroyed and ran away. Houses were destroyed after hitting each other and collapsed on top of each other. One of the five fugitive men slipped and fell on the ground; as he watched the destruction of houses in front of him, the debris fell on him and obliterated him from the ground. The ships in the harbor were being broken up. The large gilded ship belonging to the House of Talesky, which was the most resistant, had minor cracks and was slowly being destroyed. The boats were destroyed one after the other and their broken sticks hit the people and destroyed those who were not paying attention. Adgar was nailed in place, not moving, not doing anything. He was just witnessing the incident. Yanjy hit his back suddenly and fell to the ground. He got up and said: "My Lord, this is an earthquake! We have to run away."

Adgar needed a few minutes to understand the matter, but those few minutes might be enough. "My child is inside one of the ships." A woman

shouted. "Help me, please....please...."
Her tears fell like raindrops and dried on her cheeks. No one seemed to care about her. Everyone crawls to a corner to save their life. The woman was not like the hero of the stories who went into the ship and saved her child; On the other hand, she was scared and all she was doing was screaming, and crying. Adgar moved towards her. Yanjy took his hand and said: "What are you doing? We need to get out of here quickly before it's too late!"
"That woman's child is stuck inside the ship, we have to save her."
"We are not heroes." Yanjy said cruelly. "Who cares about that child in this damn situation? We have to get out of here."
Adgar grabbed his hand. "You go and save yourself."
He ran towards the woman. While walking, he saw a man running on his right side at a far distance, he noticed that a man's head was hit by a large stone….***….. When he reached the woman, he asked: "Which ship is your son in?"
The woman pointed to the ship she was looking

at. "That ship. He went to get a tip a few hours ago, but he hasn't returned yet. Please save him."
Adgar recognized the ship when he saw it. The sails of the ship had no special pattern. It belonged to the young Prince Unika. Adgar thought to himself: Prince Unika's offer was a pity! Now Adgar Ritanion had to think about returning those two big blue rubies; it may not have cost as much as the ship, but at least it was worth it. He went to the ship. A woman's voice came from a distance: "I pray for you."
"Of course it is." Adgar whispered to herself.
The Stones and the pieces of wood danced in the air, as did cloths and flags. Adgar, walking towards the ship, passed them with special care; if he made the smallest mistake, he knew the result would be death, and death doesn't joke with anyone. He moved cautiously and reached the ship. The ship was shaking. The stairs of the ship had been destroyed, making it difficult for Adgar. He persistently climbed the hull of the ship and reached its deck. The ship was empty. The sound of sobbing could be heard from somewhere. He hesitated for a moment and observed the harbor.

The earthquake grabbed the harbor like a hungry monster and tore it apart and it was still going on. He went to the cabins. He kicked the half wooden door open. He jumped in and followed the sound. An Indistinct cry was heard. He strengthened his sense of hearing. The sound error made it not recognize the right sound. He opened the cabin rooms quickly one after the other. He entered a room, heard a sound, and lowered his head to see under the table. He found a cat hiding under the table. He thought to himself: The poor cat has taken refuge in a corner out of fear! He was in these thoughts that the body of the ship was separated and the ship became naked. The ship was moving back and forth with a long tide. Water poured into the ship. He held the cat tightly in his arms and left the cabin. The cat had clung itself to him, he felt that it was difficult to separate it from himself. He came over the edge of the ship. He threw the cat to the shore. The cat screamed as it fell and quickly gathered itself up and ran with all its strength on its feet to get away from the danger. Due to the intensity of the sea waves, the ship wanted to be vertical. Adgar

should have increased the weight of the other side of the ship before the ship became vertical so that the ship would reach its balance, but he did not have time to do so and had to hurry. He thought to himself: Where was the child on the ship? There was nothing left until the ship sank. He should have decided soon that either he would get out of the ship in despair and return to the mother empty-handed, or was there even a mother to return to him? Or with the remaining chance, he would have found the child from the sinking ship, which was very unlikely. It was at this time that his attention was drawn to the ship's captain's cabin and he said: "That's it!!"

He hurried towards it. He opened the door firmly. Luckily, the boy was squatting on the floor. His head was down and he was crying. Adgar stepped forward, knelt down, and said, "Finally, we must go before we drown. Hurry up!"

The boy stopped crying when he saw him, went to him and threw himself into his arms; He clung to him like that cat. Adgar thought to himself that this is a second cat, just heavier. Adgar felt the darkness of the middle white appear. He got up

and ran quickly with the boy in the darkness and came to the deck of the ship. the ship was split in half by a fierce storm and was about to capsize in the sea, when Adgar quickly jumped into the sea with the boy. The sea water took them from one side to another. The ship sank after they jumped. Adgar couldn't see anything under the water. Everything was dark under the water and he was drowning with the boy in the darkness of the water. After a while, the white light illuminated the surface of the water and inside it. The tide of the sea was constantly decreasing, until it stopped and the sea finally became calm. Adgar along with the boy raised themselves to the surface of the water and floated on a wooden board. He saw the harbor again, which was completely destroyed near the city. Both of them came ashore with difficulty. Adgar laid down on the sand facing the white sky. He was panting, he was completely wet. He shook his black hair. In some parts, his clothes were torn; it was probably stuck somewhere. He had become a hero in his mind and was proud of himself. He got up. He saw looked at where the boy's mother was standing,

there was no sign of her. The boy walked towards the piled up rubble. "Mommy...Mommy..." He was crying.
He pushed away the sticks and stones that he had the power to move. He let go of those that were big, heavy and he was unable to move. Under a large stone, there was a body whose face couldn't be seen. He tried to pull the stone to the other side, but he couldn't. Adgar helped him and moved the stone. After the stone moved away, he saw a woman's face. Adgar had seen the woman's face and he couldn't forget it soon. He looked closely, her face was bloody and dirty. The skin on one side of her face was torn off and her right hand was also cut off. "This is not my mother." The boy said.
"Yes, she's not," Adgar confirmed. "She probably ran away and hid in the city."
"I hope so." the boy said.
The boy attached himself to Adgar; like he didn't want to be separated from him. "An earthquake brings good luck to the Taleskys, but it brings bad luck to the Ritanions!" Adgar muttered.

Chapter 9
Ritanion
The beginning of a new journey

"**T**his was the ninth earthquake hit the north in the last three centuries." Irvyn said. “The main question here is why the earthquake should come only for the north? What's so special about the north? I mean, why only the north?!"
Nobody said anything. The hall was silent like a cemetery for a few minutes. Irvyn could see their surprised faces. It was clear that none of them had any particular opinion on this matter. He waited to hear an answer. "It's probably because of the Mountain of conqueror." His steward Olsen expressed his opinion.
"Yeah, sure the dead can make an earthquake behind the Mountain of conqueror!" Lord Matt

Harrop quipped.
They all laughed. Irvyn sat on his stone throne. There were two large tables side by side facing the stone throne that Irvyn was sitting on. The northern lords and knights were sitting thoughtfully on their chairs in the hall. Everyone was shocked by what had happened in the Troylo's harbor, especially Adgar; because he was present at that scene and had seen the disaster closely. He still remembers the sound of the timbers breaking and the ship capsizing. "It's a miracle you survived!" Olsen told Adgar.
Lord Kallphen Flame was arguing with Lord Saron Richmond, called the Silver-beard. Lord Dermot Tallmen was silent and deep in thought. Lord Matt Harrop laughed along with his knights. Lord Levin Arliss, the ant-man, was also sleeping; like he didn't care about the issue. Lord Ben Selwyn was looking at the assembly of the lords and playing with the glass in his hand in a corner of the hall. Irvyn could see them all from his high position. The stones of the throne were bothering his back. He had to give them to a stone cutter to shave the stones a little so that the person sitting

on them would feel comfortable. But as he thought more, he understood that feeling comfortable was not important now. Troylo's harbor was razed to the ground, and his cousin was about to turn into ashes. He blamed himself for sending Adgar to the harbor. A solution should be found so that this big scandal doesn't happen in the future. Irvyn stood up. He gestured with his hand. One of the knights knocked on the table. Everyone fell silent again. "My lords and my knights, whether we like it or not, the earthquake happened and it has caused us irreparable damage, including the death of many innocent people. No matter how much we think why it happened, it doesn't matter anymore. The important thing now is to prepare for the next one. And find out where and when it will happen so that we can evacuate that area before the earthquake so that no one gets hurt. In fact, there is one person who can predict the next earthquake with high probability. His name is Aramis. He lives in the Steam City among the black mountains. I will personally go to the Steam City to get full information about the next

earthquake." Irvyn said.
"The paths to the Steam City are dangerous." Lord Selwyn said. "Bandits lurk along the way. They don't care who gets in their way, a lord or a vassal. Besides, the situation of the Steam City also has changed. What guarantee is there that something will not happen to you? It is better to send someone else, perhaps your cousin. It has been proven for all of us that he doesn't die so easily and has become a miracle man."
"Thank you for your concern, Lord Selwyn." Irvyn replied. "Many years have passed since the last time I saw Aramis, but I still remember his manners well. He doesn't answer to anyone. The savior of the city cannot take any risks. The city is located in the north and the savior knows well that the whole north is ruled by which house. So he never weakens his position by taking risks and attacking the Lord of Sword's Nepp. He doesn't want to turn the whole north against him."
Lord Tallmen stood up. "Why don't you send a letter so Aramis himself will come here? Or he will send you full information about the next earthquake in a letter."

"The chance of finding out that way are very low. The ravens are hunted before they reach the Steam City. And if they do, Aramis will never come here. This is my final word and my final word won't change. The North shouldn't experience another danger." Irvyn replied.
Lord Saron Richmond also got up. He touched his silver beard. "You look just like your father! stubborn! You say your words, listen to the words of the other lords and make your final decision. No one can convince you to change your mind. This shows that you are a true Ritanion! I respect your decision. Whatever happens, I'm with you, now and forever."
The rest of the lords stood up and said: "Now and forever."
Lords and knights left the hall one by one. Adgar was still sitting in his chair, thinking about the events at the harbor. An incident that was close to death. The sentence that Steward Olsen had told him remained in his mind. After many damages, Irvyn's men had checked that more than two hundred people had died. About forty people were also injured. The financial losses were

unpredictable. Many large commercial ships were also sunk in the sea. The Houses had written letters to the North and asked Irvyn Ritanion for the compensation. They said that this happened in the North and that it was the responsibility of the warden of the North. In response to the letters, Irvyn replied that the earthquake was not our fault. We did not know that such a thing would happen; we have also suffered a lot. Irvyn thought to himself that ruling is not easy and he will face many challenges, but the earthquake! He had not found an answer for that. Why did it happened? Why did it happen to the North? Little by little, he had come to the conclusion that it is no longer important to think about what happened. He should do everything he can to prevent these unexpected events. "Are you okay?" Irvyn asked his cousin.

"Yes, I suppose." Adgar raised his head and replied.

"Good, I'm sorry I put you in danger. It was my fault. You'd better to rest for a few days."

"No, my lord. It's not your fault. You didn't know there would be an earthquake."

"What happened to Master Yanjy?"
"He escaped to the city and survived, but his ship was destroyed. I don't think he would continue his dirty work, not after what happened."
Irvyn got up from his throne. "Good, let him remember."
"What time do we leave for the Steam City?"
"I thought we agreed that you rest."
The sun had not fully risen and had turned the sky into the twilight. When the roosters saw the first rays of sunlight, they sang the morning song and wake up the servants and workers of Sword's Nepp for the first morning. It was cold in the morning in the North. A cold wind was blowing from the last and northern point, that is, the last mountain, the Mountain of conqueror. The black shadow of the mountain reached over the entire north, even as far as the Wild Bridge. The mountain was so big that its end couldn't be seen by standing next to it. As far as he could see, he could see its greatness; it was like a wall that reached the end of the sky. It was the ninth day of Tweek and the second month of summer, the Setwend, which was the second month of Irvyn

Ritanion's rule as warden of the North. Irvyn wore a cream-colored leather robe. He closed his black buttons carefully. There was a pin on the table next to him, a sword was engraved on it. He took it and attached it to his chest. He wore a belt made of otter skin around his waist, his steel sword was attached to it. The sword was a gift from his father when he declared Irvyn as his successor. He came out and stood on the large circular porch. The shadow of the sword hilt fell where he stood. The great sword had sunk into the heart of the tower and was keeping its balance while standing with the structures that were built around it. The pigeons that sat on the hilt of the sword and made a mess, there were ladders put up by the workers and they were cleaning it. Irvyn thought to himself: What a great sword! It can easily kill imaginary giants! The command to move was announced an hour later. Seven horsemen left Sword's Nepp. In their eyes, the Sword Castle was seen smaller. As they moved away, the castle became like a sword tied to their waist. The horses trotted under the command of their rider. The black mountains could be seen.

The big and small mountain ranges were placed together in a chain-like form. The Steam City couldn't be seen; because the city was located in the middle of the mountains. The mountains that surrounded it from all sides made it impossible for the riders to see it, and it was difficult to find it. They were moving in the day and in the middle white until the night came and prevented them from continuing their journey. They stopped on a hill. Last year's winter snow was still left on the mountain peaks. The sun had not melted it yet. Handsome Sir Farly Rad was trying to make a fire by stirring stones on the wood he had collected. A small spark caused the formation of a big fire whose flames burned all the wood. The sliced lamb meat was placed on the skewers to be grilled. Sir Aksel Marsten sang a song in the twilight. He had a good voice, but not as beautiful as the singers of the capital. They had a great talent in writing ballad for which they practiced a lot. Sir Aksel was also connected with them when he was in the capital, and had learned to compose ballad there. Irvyn was sitting on a boulder listening to Sir Aksel singing. Sir Aksel,

who was singing, saw Irvyn's face. "My lord, if my singing makes you uncomfortable, I will stop."
"Not at all," said Irvyn. “You have a beautiful voice, you should use it."
"Yes." the others shouted.
The silvery moonlight had become a crescent in the starry sky and was shining. The lamb roast was almost ready. Its strong smell wafted in the air. It was left on the fire too much and a small part of it was burnt, but it didn’t reduce anything from its excellent taste. After finishing dinner, Irvyn ordered two men to stand guard till the morning. Adgar had joined them insistently. Together, they were telling stories that Irvyn could hear the whispers of them. "A sword that made entirely of white diamonds. When it was waved in the air by the warrior, the lightning of the sword dazzled the eyes of the beholders and blinded the visually impaired. The iron swords against it were like a cloth of weeds that it cut so easily and divided into thousands of pieces. That sword amazed and fascinated everyone. The warrior was in a one-on-one battle with his

brother, who wielded the steel Swordwin sword. Their battle is known as the Diamond Sky Duel. The battle lasted longer than the Middle white. Fans on both sides were astonished. As the swords collided, the heartbeats of the fans increased. The excitement was at its peak, but an interesting thing happened."

"What happened?" asked Sir Baren Derell curiously. "Which one died?"

Seeing the passion in his eyes, Sir Farly Rad continued the story: "Listen, nobody died. The warrior held the diamond sword above his head to guard against his brother's struck. His brother's struck was so hard that..."

Sir Farly changed his tone a bit, and continued:"He struck the white diamond sword so hard that the sword split into countless small diamonds. People got up and ran to the battlefield. Each of them picked up the small fallen diamonds on the ground as much as they could. That duel …"

The sound was cut off. Irvyn, who was lying facing the sky and his eyes had just warmed up to sleep, was paying attention to Sir Farly's speech,

and he was a little worried when his voice suddenly stopped. He put his hand on the hilt of his sword. His eyes were still closed. He was hoped that nothing special had happened, but the more he thought, the more he realized that he shouldn't be too optimistic. The events that had happened in the past few days had made him more cautious. He opened his eyes to see what had happened. As soon as he opened his eyes, he saw the ax blade near his throat. A big man blocking the moonlight was standing in front of him with a proud face, like a bear. His face was scarred. A deep cut was seen below his left eye; so that the bones could be seen from the outside, which caused Irvyn's horror. He was wearing a big robe that covered his whole body. "You have a beautiful sword!" The scarred face man said to Irvyn. “You came to the bad part of the North. Did you lose your way home?"

Another man arrived. His head was bald and without a single strand of hair. His eyes were constantly opening and closing. He had an ugly face and smelled like rotten onions. The scarred face pointed at Irvyn's sword. The bald man was

repeating some words while approaching Irvyn: "The master is right, the master is right."
He reached Irvyn. He looked at his face. He laughed stupidly. He was shaking his fingers as he approached Irvyn. He reached Irvyn's sword. He unbuckles the sword along with his leather scabbard from his belt. He brought it to the scarred face and gave it to him. "This is for the master, this is for the master."
After saying his words, he hid behind the tall figure of his master. Adgar, Steward Olsen, Ritter Mars, and Sir Aksel Marsten were handcuffed by some other attackers and thrown to the ground as soon as they arrived. Ritter Mars was scarred, the blood was pouring from his ear. The scarred face moved his head closer to Irvyn and said softly: "This is not a dream in case you were wondering. This is real, stand up!"
Irvyn got up slowly. He looked at his men. Of the seven people who had come, two people were missing. Yes, Sir Barn Derell and Sir Farly Rad were missing! What happened to them? Were they killed by attackers? Irvyn was nervous. He looked at the attackers; the scarred face seemed to

be their boss. About twenty-five people surrounded him and his men. All of them, except for bald Man, were tall people who were seen in large and thick woolen clothes. They had different war tools in their hands, which were not swords, bows, maces, spears, and hammers; it was similar to a stick, but it was not wooden. It was made of pure black stone. Irvyn thought to himself: How can they hold it in their hand with its heavy weight? Even if they want to use it and move it in the air.

"What do you want?" Irvyn asked.

Everyone remained silent so their master, scarred face, spoke. He said one word: "Everything!"

The bald man behind him was repeating his words: "Everything, everything."

Irvyn stepped forward. "What do you mean?"

A moment later, the dark night became darker than ever. He saw the blackness. A man hit him from behind with the back of a black stone stick. Irvyn fell to the ground unconsciously. The golden light of the sun hurt his eye. He was still confused even though he wasn't fully awakened. The pain had just come to his head. He pulled

himself out of the world of imagination as he heard a voice: "My Lord, my Lord, do you hear me?"
Someone kicked his back, he moaned. His pain was worse than his headache and spread throughout his body. Another voice came that sounded like crickets: "Rise and shine, you filthy cockroaches!"
Irvyn opened his eyes. A man was standing over him. His skin was wrinkled and dark. He had a long nose, as long as a stork's beak, and a funny hat on his head. He said to himself: What a bad smell! The man wanted to kick him again. He was ready to hit him when he approached Irvyn, but Irvyn grabbed the man's leg with his hands and lifted it up. The man fell to the ground on his back. He picked him up, stood behind him and wrapped his arms around his throat. He wanted to strangle him. The poor man was struggling. The attackers crowded around them and stood around them in a circle. Their master, scarred face, came. He pointed the sword he took from Irvyn towards Adgar who was sitting on the ground. "Don't you want me to cut your cousin's head off?"

Irvyn was surprised. His facial expression changed and his hands became loose a bit. Their master said again: "I know, I know… After you fell into your sweet slumber, your men and I talked about many things, Irvyn Ritanion!"
Irvyn freed his hands from the poor man's throat. After being freed, the man coughed repeatedly and cursed Irvyn while he was panting. The scarred face ordered the rest of his men to move. Irvyn went to Adgar's side, helped him up. The rest of his people also joined them. "Did you tell him everything?" Irvyn asked.
"My lord, they are more foolish than we thought" Ritter Mars said before Adgar could answer. "They have no idea who the Ritanions are. Whoever they find in the mountains, they take them as slaves to their tribe and use them as their personal servants."
"Where are we going now?" Irvyn asked.
"To the Scorpion tribe, it is probably located on the mountainside."
Irvyn, along with the remaining four, was surrounded by twenty-five giant northern raiders. They walked with the sticks in their hands in the

pride parade. Running away was a bad idea. Where could they go? Their path was blocked from all sides. If there was a hope, they would still not succeed and the black stone sticks would be aimed at them. Irvyn Ritanion was smarter than to risk the lives of his men by running away; He still had not forgotten the grief of losing his two beloved knights. Waiting was the best option for now. They reached the top of a mountain. "It's time to eat!" shouted one of the attackers who had a hairy face.

The others shouted as they heard his voice: "Yes...yes...!"

They raised their sticks as a sign of happiness and shouted. "We eat six times a day." said the attacking man standing next to Irvyn.

"No wonder you grew up like a bear."Irvyn said.

The man laughed ridiculously. His damaged teeth could be seen when he laughed. He answered: "Yes!"

Irvyn watched their eating for the first time. They devoured food like hungry animals. They looted their travel supplies that night. They poured all the drinks on the floor and cheered. There was

only meat and bread left. They kept the meats on the fire to the marrow of the bone to be fried. The one who took the meats faster, the meat would be his. And their master, scarred face, was crueler than all of them. After the food was finished, their little feast started. The heat was at its peak. Irvyn thought to himself: Aren't they warm with all the wool clothes they're wearing? Or do they care about the heat? He deeply knew that it doesn't matter. At a distance of a hundred yards, white tents could be seen side by side. "We have reached the White Scorpion tribe." one of them shouted.

The children of the tribe ran towards them when they saw them. They gathered around them and were bothering them with thin sticks. "Get away from me, you goddamn boy!" Sir Aksel yelled.

A strong man punched Sir Aksel on the face. His nose became bloody. The struck was so heavy that he was about to lose his balance and fall. Ritter Mars caught him after the struck and calmed him down. Their master came forward. "If you resist, I will cut off your ears and give them to the children to play with."

Irvyn was gnashing his teeth in rage and was looking at him with a look full of anger. The master approached him. "Don't you want to lose your ears?"
"I don't think so!" Irvyn replied.

Chapter 10
Ritanion
The darkness of the middle white

Irvyn couldn't sleep well last night. He had been walking all day and the middle white. His legs were shaking from exhaustion. Especially because of the place where he was in, it was difficult for him to sleep. The pigs approached him from all sides and disgusted him with the mess they had done. Last night, one of the pigs was whining until the morning and his ear-scratching sound had driven him crazy. He remembered his bed in Sword's Nepp; nothing was as soft and comfortable as that. Lord Selwyn had warned him that the mountain bandits would come to them, but he had not taken it seriously and the fate had brought him to the piggery of the northern

raiders. It was not yet morning when they took them to the separate tents, and Irvyn stayed in the tent of the master of the White Scorpion tribe, who was called Allock, at his command.
The master Allock had nine children, all of them were boys: two of them were suckling, three of them were toddler, and four of them were teen. Everyone gathered around him and looked at him eagerly. His seventh child, who had braided gray hair, touched him cautiously and asked his brother: "Can he talk?"
"Open his mouth so we can see if he has a tongue or not!" His older brother replied.
Irvyn was looking at them with wide eyes. He thought to himself: What creatures! "What are you doing?" he asked.
The seventh boy became happy when he heard his voice: "He can talk! Father said he can entertain us."
The first boy brought the knife in his hand closer to Irvyn and said: "You will be our servant and slave. You must do whatever we tell you, otherwise I will tear out your eyes."
"Your father wants to cut off my ears, his son also

wants to tear out my eyes. Tell me, what does your mother want?" Irvyn laughed.
The boys were surprised and looked at each other. "Your lips." replied the boy who could barely speak.
Many Rupture were seen in the tents outside. The people of the tribe had not even patched them together so that the cold would not penetrate, or they did not care about it; On the other hand, with the woolen clothes they wore, the cold didn't dare to come within an inch of their bodies. The days were warm, the middle white was balanced and the nights were cold. The greatness of the Mountain of conqueror was clear. They had come to the northernmost point of the north near the Mountain of conqueror and had passed the Steam City. Master Allock, along with his men, had brought them from the mountains so that they wouldn't pass through the city.
The White Scorpions made a great feast of the flesh of their swift horses. They ate seven horses in one day. They usually ate six meals a day, but that day they had nine meals; it was as if it was their golden day and they were happy. Grilled

meats were placed on the plates between the tents and everyone who passed by would pick one and eat it with great enthusiasm. The plates were full of meat. Irvyn vomited as he saw them. When he saw the skull of his own horse, he became angry. He wanted to tear open their bellies and take out all the parts of the animal, connect them to each other and bring the animal back to life with a miraculous lightning; Like the legendary Nyle's Wolf. In the legend of the Nyle's Wolf, it is said that the Nyle's Wolf was kidnapped by his brother, who hated the wolf very much. After stealing the wolf, he killed it and divided its body into twenty-seven parts. He buried every part somewhere. When Nyle found out about this, he found all the parts of the wolf and connected them together. He went to the top of a hill and prayed for a few night-white-day. A Lightning strikes the wolf and the wolf comes back to life. After coming back to life, the wolf kills his brother and splits him into twenty-seven parts to take his revenge. Irvyn had read that legend in the book with a great excitement. Now he wanted it to become a reality, but he knew that all the

legends or some of them were lies, but the real world did not have a bit of legends and there were wonders hidden in it.
The sky was getting dark and the middle white was setting. The white color of the sky turned to gray and gradually turned to darkness. A moment later, the silver moon took over the sky with its guardian stars. Irvyn was sitting on a stone slab and was carving a wooden stick with a slow knife. The length of the stick was a foot longer than his height and its thickness was the size of his two knuckles. One end was round and the other end was pointed to resemble a spear. Its sharpness was not as sharp as that of his sword, which was made of Swordwin steel, but it was as effective as it was. It could tear the chests of the White Scorpion men through their thick woolen clothes. The stick was almost sharpened. He put the knife aside. He looked at one tent, its color was pure white. Its outer roof was overgrown with weeds. A minute later, Adgar came out of it. He reached him with confident and quick steps. "It's time. Olsen, Ritter Mars and Sir Aksel would do this. The fires will be lit with your sign."

"When the fire is lit, everyone in the tribe is thinking about putting it out, and nobody cares about us." Irvyn said. "We will leave the tribe in the dark of the night."

He got up and took a few steps forward, then turned to Adgar. "Alright, let's start!"

He took off his necklace. He removed the egg-shaped stone from the chain and pushed it into the sharpened end of the stick. The stone went in with a small crack a few inches. Grabbing the spear-like stick with his right hand, he threw it into the air with all his strength. The tents of the White Scorpion tribe were placed on the ground lengthwise and behind each other, and the spear traveled across it; That is, it passed through the middle of the tents. After being thrown in the air, it made a loud and scream-like sound. Irvyn Ritanion had called it the sound of a storm. The fire started from all sides and engulfed the tents. Irvyn walked towards the flames. A man ran outside, and shouted: "This is the devil's work! Only the devil can make fire with such a terrible sound!"

The burnt tents were almost empty. Everyone was

trying to silence the burning voice of the devil. They were panicking and looking for water. A man with a bucket of water in his hand wanted to put out the flames persistently. With every step he took, the water in the bucket shook. He got close to the flames, but his leg got stuck in an obstacle and he fell on his face. The bucket of water was thrown away and the water in it spilled on the ground. Desperately, he looked at it briefly, got up and went to refill the bucket. Irvyn had made sure that all the stored water was used up. So they had to go to a source on top of the mountain that was far away from the tribe to bring water, which took a lot of time. This was Irvyn's time. Master Allock's tent had not caught fire yet. He went to his tent; it seemed that no one was inside. Probably, the residents went out after seeing the fire. He found his sword on Allock's special chair. He felt good when he picked up the sword. It's like he's become Lord Sword's Nepp again and sworn to his land to defend the north, even against northern invaders! He attached the sword to his belt along with his leather scabbard. "It was you?"

Irvyn, who was busy fastening his sword to his belt, raised his head when he heard the sound. He looked behind him. He saw the master Allock angry and furious. "Yes, unfortunately."
A stone stick trembled in his hand. He approached Irvyn angrily. "What do you want to do?" Irvyn continued. "Kill me? now? That night, you caught me unarmed with a blade pointed at my throat, but now the situation has changed. We can fight and have a dance in the middle of the fire with the screams of your people, but think more, at this moment, is it important to kill the person who did this or to save your people? If I were you, I would definitely help those who were caught in the fire; because this is the wisest thing to do, but the choice is yours."
"You can try to kill me or you can try to save your people." Irvyn gestured with his hand.
He paused and then he continued: "Make up your mind."
Irvyn moved closer to him, eye to eye. Irvyn's eyes were like two small marbles, and master Allock's eyes were like two hazelnuts. "I don't think you can!" Irvyn added.

He passed by him and went out. Adgar and the others were standing outside waiting for him. They were happy to see him and said: "My Lord." Irvyn had scared hundreds of people with the game he started. He remembered the earthquake and thought that he had somehow avenged it. The more he thought, the more he came to the conclusion that he had done a cowardly thing. The earthquake was considered an unintentional event, but his fire was deliberate and pre-planned, similar to Lord Ben Selwyn's fire. These thoughts were bothering him. He wanted to get out of there as soon as possible so he wouldn't hear the screams anymore. They moved away from the tents, which were almost turned into ashes. Irvyn glanced back to see how much damage he had done to the tribe. When he looked at his back, he was surprised! Terrified people suddenly fell on the ground and drowned in their own blood. Men with axes in their hands had beaten them. They didn't leave the old men, women and children alive. Anyone who got in the way of their axes was brutally killed. "Who else are they?" Irvyn asked.

The men of the tribe gave up putting out the flames and started fighting them. They cursed each other. Master Allock was confronted with one of the axman. The ax versus the stone stick was interesting and frightening at the same time. One would cut and the other would crushed. The axman aimed the ax at Allock. Allock deflected his struck. At that moment, he lost his balance, his leg loosened and he fell to the ground. The axman stood above his head, raised the ax with both hands and prepared for the final struck. When the ax landed, Allock moved and got up. The intensity of the struck of the axman to Allock was so great that the hand of the axman hurt and he screamed. Allock hit him with his stick one after another heavily. His last struck hit axman's chest and knocked him to the ground. The ax was released from his hand. Allock bravely walked towards him. Axman was stumbling and trying to get up. As Allock wanted to hit him, he ran rolled on the ground to reach his ax. When he reached his ax, he picked it up. He hit Allock's left leg hard. Allock screamed and fell to his knees. The axman separated the ax from his leg and wanted

to aim at his head. He made a mistake last time, but this time he was sure that he won't do it again. He said: "You won't get lucky this time!"
He laughed mysteriously. The ax was twirling in his hand when the laugh turned to silence on his lips and he fell on the ground in front of Allock. A sword had hit him from behind. Irvyn pulled the sword out from the dead man and pushed him aside. He looked at Allock. Red blood had flowed from his leg. "It was cowardly, but it was necessary." he said.
Irvyn and his men, run towards the axes, saying; "For the North! Fight or die!"
The fire of war and the flames went out with the coming of the sun. The bodies were lying on the sticks, burnt tents and stones. The battle ended with the retreat of the axmen. The people of the White Scorpion tribe suffered a lot, more than half of the bodies belonged to them. Master Allock was also wounded. The ax that hit his toes had cut off two of them. Irvyn and his men helped the rest of the people to sort out the damages and the wounded. The dead were taken to the valley and thrown down from there to become food for

scavengers. They believed that this is the nature of life. One day we eat them and one day they eat us. This is the cycle of life.
Irvyn bandaged a man's hand that had wound. He had read some important points about medicine in the books in the library of Sword's Nepp and he was somehow familiar with it. The wound wasn't too deep to get stitches with a needle and thread. He wrapped a purple colored cloth on it without pressing the bandage so that the person does not suffer too much pain. He felt the presence of a strong man. His eyes were strange. The small black seed inside his eye was changing. When he tried to look at Irvyn, the seed moved upwards. "Master Allock wants to see you." He said.
He was talking to Irvyn, but he was looking elsewhere. He took a few steps forward and said again: "now!"
This word came out of his mouth with a certain seriousness and Irvyn took it seriously. After finishing his work, Irvyn immediately got up and went to master Allock's tent. His tent was intact and undamaged. He pulled the cloth of the tent and entered it. Allock was leaning on a chair

without clothes. His head was up and his eyes were closed. His injured leg was in a pan of water. Hearing footsteps inside his tent, he shook his head and saw Irvyn standing in front of him. "Why are you here?" he asked.
"Who were the ones who attacked last night?" Irvyn asked.
"We call them men of the Ax tribe, whose master is Gage."
"What do they want?"
"Rule over the mountain, and of course, over us!"
"He obviously wants to do it by force," Irvyn said. "You could have gone last night, but you fought beside my people, why?"
"You don't have enough people to fight their next attack. If you have it, which I hope you have, but you don't, you will fail. If I were in Gage, I would make the best attack after my enemy is weakened; it means now!"
"So?"
"I want to help you defeat all of them without losing one of your men, but on one condition."
"How do you want to win over a hundred strong men without fear and without losing a single

person? Can you do magic?"
Irvyn came forward a bit and said" "Does it matter?"
Allock took his foot out of the pan full of water and stood up. "Suppose we defeat them, what do you want?"
"After this little battle, from now on anyone who comes to this area from the north in the name of Ritanion, will not be captured, wounded or killed, agreed?" Irvyn replied.
Allock shook his head and replied: "agreed."
A large number of tall warriors came to the White Scorpion Clan. Their number was up to seventy trained people. Master Gage, a middle-aged man with a long gray beard, was walking in front of them. Small ax-shaped rings were attached to his long beard, and those small rings moved when the wind blew. Gage saw them with such pride as if they were nothing more than mosquitoes in front of him. He reached Allock. Allock kept himself upright with his wooden stick. "Parenall!!!" Gage called out.
Parenall came out of the axmen. He was as tall as a real tree! He just like a giant. Two axes were

seen in his hand, which were sharper and bigger than the others' axes. The veins of his hand were sticking out; everyone could see it clearly. He wore a chain neckless. On his head was a helmet made of broken horns. "This is my fighter." Gage said. "Where is yours?"
Allock pointed to Irvyn with his hand and showed him. "Here!"
Gage's men all laughed. "You must be joking?" Gage said after a long laugh. "He is not going to kill him, he is going to eat him! So I give you one chance to choose another fighter. A fighter who can look into Parenall's eyes then be killed, not a fighter who will pee himself and die by seeing Parenall."
Allock moved with his wooden stick. He stood facing Gage at a short distance, then said: "This is my first and last fighter. The fight begins in the white sun. Tell Parenall to prepare himself for death then."
Gage touched his beard. The rings sounded when the beards shook. "I respected your offer and agreed to come here." Gage said seriously. "I want you to keep your word. If you want to play a

trick after the fight, I swear to this ax, that I will cut all your people to the bone marrow."
He pointed the ax at him and said: "Do it."
Allock took the ax. He made a small cut on his palm with an ax. The blood was gently came out. "My blood, my promise." he said.
The men on both sides had made a battlefield for the two fighters and gathered around it until the middle white came and the fight shall begin. With a smooth stone in his hand, Irvyn was rubbing the blade of his sword to polish it. He was waiting for the middle white to come and fight with the mountain giant at the end of the world. After seeing Parenall, Adgar came to him. Ritter Mars and his steward also joined them. His steward, Olsen, leaned over and said: "You shouldn't do that. You have no chance to win."
Adgar confirmed his words and said: "He's a damned giant! He's is twice of your size. His people say that he fights with one hand and his fight doesn't last more than two minutes."
Irvyn looked up. "So, I have a better chance if he fights with one hand, right?"
"Be serious." Adgar said. "This fight is not fair,

cousin. We have to leave here quickly. It has nothing to do with us to interfere in their struggle. We have to continue on our way."
"Where is here?" Irvyn asked.
"The White Scorpion tribe." Adgar said.
"Where is the White Scorpion tribe?"
"In the mountains"
"Where does the mountain belong?"
"The North"
Irvyn stood up. "Then, it is exactly related to us."
"At least let me fight." The experienced Ritter Mars said. “We don't lose anything if I die, but you are the future of the North. We won't let anything happen to you."
"I have lost the two of my best knights so far." Irvyn said. "I don't want to lose the most loyal man and fighter. I won't hide behind my men to keep myself alive."
"What about me?" Adgar stood in front of him.
"No, I won't repeat my mistake anymore."
"So how do you want to defeat it?"
Irvyn looked at the sky and said: "Do you trust me?"
There were a few minutes left until the middle

white. The Parenall had come to the battlefield sooner than Irvyn. The men of His tribe was raising their axes to the air and they were screaming to weaken the spirit of Irvyn. Irvyn opened its way through the men of the White Scorpion tribe who were on his side. He passed through them and came to the circle of battle for the fight. Two fighters were faced together; Like the Mountain of conqueror in front of Sword's Nepp. The crowd fell silent. Gage entered the battlefield. He stood in the middle of the fight and said: "There are no rules. Only one person will come out from this circle of death, of course alive. The fight begins after the darkness."
He laughed at Irvyn and said: "Probably not you. How do you want to be eaten, boy? "
"By soil, when I die at the age of eighty." Irvyn smiled.
Irvyn drew his alliance sword from its scabbard. Parenall also had two axes in his hands, ready to eat the boy to the bone when he saw the white sun. He made his face look a little scary to scare Irvyn, but Irvyn didn't care. He had taken the sword and was checking the distance between

himself and Parenall. The sun was setting and leaving the sky for its next destination to shine on the other side of the world. An orange line was formed behind the setting sun. When the sun disappeared, a black wave spread. It started from the south. Irvyn could see the black wave approaching from the south to the north to sweep the whole world in its blackout. Darkness reached over Irvyn's head and passed him too. All the lights in the sky went out, even the lit torches on earth. No light could shine during the darkness of the white middle. The world went dark for a few minutes. Everyone was waiting for the middle white to start the crucial fight. In these critical minutes, the eyes were disabled and they couldn't see anything. Ears were the main power in the darkness. The sound of heart beats could be heard well. The sharp sound of cutting something was heard too! The sound of a loud moaning! And the sound of falling! But What? Everyone was waiting to see. The middle white has finally dawned and people's visions have become clear. When they all saw the fight scene, they were shocked! Irvyn were standing where he was

before the middle white with his sword in his hand. Parenall was on his knees. Blood was pouring from his cut knees on the ground. Irvyn stepped forward with his sword and plunged the whole blade of sword into his heart. The giant looked into Irvyn's small eyes and died a moment later in the circle of death. After the sword was removed from the heart, Parenall fell to the ground. Irvyn had used the darkness of the middle white to kill Parenall. "There are no rules!" Irvyn shouted. "Only one person will come out alive from this circle of death."

He looked at Gage and said: "Remember?"

"You tricked me?" Gage said angrily.

Irvyn came up to him and said: "Did anyone see what happened when it got dark? I was exactly where I was standing."

He went to his men and said to each of them: "Did you see what happened?"

He returned to the middle of the battlefield and shouted: "I didn't see what happened in the dark either, but I won in the white light."

He stood in front of Gage again, then said: "I won. It's time to do what you have to do."

Gage took a deep breath, he was convinced. He had not seen anything in the dark either. He came towards Allock. He knelt before him, held his ax in his hands before him. The rest of his people did this after him. "My men and I are at your service, the great master Allock." Gage said.
They prepared to go to the Steam City. Master Allock had given Irvyn and his men supplies for their journey to the Steam City. The Generosity that he had spent for the first time in his life. He felt ashamed for his horses and knights. He called Irvyn his most beloved Ritanion. After the fight, Ritter Mars was proud of himself for being the companion of Norris Ritanion's son and said that this has been the best trip he has ever taken. After a long walk through the middle of the mountains, the Steam City could be seen from a height. They stopped a hundred yards from the city. The Steam City was surrounded by tall mountains that hid the city. The walls of the city looked pale brown. The gate of the city was golden, big and magnificent. Flags with a yellow sun on a white background were hanging on the walls of the city. Adgar stood in front of the others and said:

"so, this is the Steam City!"

Chapter 11
Ritanion
The steam city

The floor of Steam City was made of special stones that had small hazelnut-shaped holes. When the holes were opened, steam would come out and engulf the city in a thick fog. Keene, the savior of the city, had explained to Irvyn that in winter, the snow that fell from the sky went into the open holes. The snow was accumulated on a special bottom surface that was placed under the holes, which is called Stymold. Stymold turns the accumulated snow into ice; so that it doesn't melt. In the summer, it sends the ice up as steam when the holes are opened. This cold fog-like steam brings cool air to the city in the summer so that no one feels hot. In a Night-white-day, the holes were opened five times.

Unlike Allock, who was now the master of two

tribes, the savior of the city, along with his six defenders, had welcomed them well. He had given them suitable rooms in his big mansion. Irvyn who was exhausted from his journey, rested well. At night, he put his head on cotton-filled pillows and laid on a soft bed. Keene treated them in a way that a lord deserves; He would provide them with better facilities as much as possible. Keene seemed like a generous man, and so were his six defenders. The Steam City was run by eight people, the eighth of whom had recently died. His suspicious death happened a few days ago. When Irvyn found out that the eighth person was Aramis, he couldn't believe it. Keene told him that He was not an enemy to anyone, nor the others were his enemies, and he didn't have any special illness. All his thoughts were looking for knowledge. The day they found him in his house, he was dead with a paper in his hand. There was one word written on the paper: "fate." Everyone who had killed him, they had done it very clean. The cause of his death, according to what the doctor said was due to suffocation. He was a good man. He always advised: "if you can save ten

people, that ten people will save a hundred more people then, in this way all the people in the world will be saved from illiteracy." We buried him on the seventh day after completing the investigation about his killer. The killer was never found.

Irvyn walked the streets of the city in despair, thinking that his journey was useless. If he had known that Aramis had died, he wouldn't have come to the Steam City and he would have done something else. It wasn't too late. He decided to come back to Sword's Nepp tomorrow at the daylight to find another solution for this problem in the castle. Everything seemed unclear to him. Something was not right here. Aramis died just nine days after the earthquake. It couldn't be an accident, but nothing could be done either. The time of ice steam had not come yet. The city was in the sunlight without the fog. The thoughts in his head distracted him from his surroundings. The sound of the laughs, shouts, fights, the voice of men who told each other stories, or the voice of old men who talked about the pride of their youth and told the young people about their

experiences with a little exaggeration, Irvyn could heard them all, but he didn't care; Because the voice he wanted to hear was no longer there. He suddenly stopped. A man was standing in front of him and was staring at him. His hands were shaking a little. He looked a little worried. "He killed himself!" He said.

Irvyn stepped forward to get a better look at him. He took a few steps forward. The holes became open, the ice steam was slowly coming out. As Irvyn approached, the ice steam reached the man's face. When he stood in the front, everything looked vague and unclear. The man's face had disappeared. He raised his hand, but he couldn’t touch anything. He looked around. He could only see those who were three steps away from him. When the steam touched his face; it was like a cool drizzle in summer. In the hot days, this cold steam was a gift that could give the best feeling in summer. By the time he returned to the mansion, the holes had been closed. Keene was walking with his wife in the corridor that led to the great hall. They were sharing short laughs. They noticed that Irvyn entered the mansion. They

stopped for Irvyn to join them. It didn't take a minute for Irvyn to stand in front of them. The savior Keene was wearing an all-yellow dress with thousands of different patterns on it, the biggest of which was a flower. He had a clean face without a single grain of hair on it. His hair was in a strange style; one side of his head was shaved and the other side of his head had long hair.

"Lord Irvyn, this is my wife, Janet, of the Unnamed land." Savior Keene said. "I met her during one of my trips. When I told about her my city, she liked it. And she accepted my early marriage proposal. We celebrated our wedding under these big pillars."

Red-blue butterflies were attached to her curly dark purple hair. She had a long face. Her white skin was as white as her teeth. Her blue eyes waved as she blinked. She had a slim waist as if she was made for dancing. Irvyn kissed her hand and said. "My lady."

"You have a beautiful wife." he looked at Keene.

"Thank you, my lord." Keene replied.

"Could you please leave us alone, my lady?" Keene politely requested of Janet.

"Yes, my Savior and my Lord." said Janet.
While walking, she took light steps without making a noise. After she was gone, Irvyn asked, "Did anyone else come to town before we got to town?"
"No," Keene replied. "Of course, many people from cities, castles, and distant lands travel here for business, but in the last month, no one has come here except you and your companions. Only the convoy that were here in the winter have gone."
"Of course it is. Along with six other defenders, you run the city well and check all the people who enter the city, but what about all the messenger birds? Can you control them as well, Savior Keene?"
Savior Keene got a little confused and said: "My Lord, thousands of birds fly in the city every day. Some of them have a letter and some of them don't. I can't prepare a dozen soldiers and hunt them all. This is impossible! I know hearing about Aramis' death made you a little sensitive, but that's normal."
"Yeah, you're right. I am still a little confused

about this story. by the way, Thank you for your hospitality. This long journey made me and my men tired and confused. We will leave the city tomorrow."
"Did you get tired of us and our city so soon?" Keene smiled.
"No, your people are very friendly and your city is very beautiful and great. I don't want to spoil these two by staying longer."
They both laughed. "It doesn't matter." Keene said. "You are kind of the king of the North. Do whatever you want and we will obey you. I almost forgot. A man lives in the city who can see the possible future and prophesy. He is called the Animal man. For some people it is right and for some it is wrong. Maybe he can help you. Before you leave, I will send one of my men accompany you to the animal man's house, if you want, of course!"
"Having come all the way to the Steam City, it wouldn't hurt to visit the animal man. Let's see what he has to say. "Irvyn said.
"My Lord, let me tell you that what he said is "likely" to happen, so it is not certain!"

The moon was closer in the Steam City than elsewhere. So close that one could touch it with fingers. Some people said that whoever goes to the top of the Mountain of conqueror, he can see the moon from a very close distance and even shake it. In the last seven centuries, no one dared to climb the Mountain of conqueror. The day the two-faced walkers conquered the Mountain of conqueror, they had conquered the whole world, and the north is its beginning. Irvyn was standing on the porch of his room and could see the details on the moon very well; He was fascinated by it. Its light had partially illuminated the city. He heard a knock on his room door. "My Lord, Brad is one of Savior Keene's men here." Adgar said from behind the door. "He wants to accompany you to the Animal man's house."

Irvyn stepped away from the porch and said: "Come in."

Adgar walked into the room with Brad. Brad was a young man. His black hair blocked his vision. "Are you ready, my lord?" he said.

They left the mansion with Brad. They arrived at the Stone Street. The holes had been opened for

the night steam. The street was quiet and there were few people in that. The shops were almost closed. The people of the city went to their houses to rest. The animal man's house entered the crossroad from Earth Street, the crossroad on the right entered Freeman Street and in the middle of the Freeman Street, his house was located inside the end of an alley. They reached the crossroad. They saw the iron signs on which the names of the streets were engraved. Soldier Street was on the left, Freeman Street was on the right, and Flowers Street was straight. They entered Freeman Street which was on the right.
"Why do you want to see him?" Adgar asked. "I heard from the people that he is crazy. He speaks strange and nonsense, or I should say imaginary."
The steam coming out prevented them from seeing far ahead. The moon was no longer visible in the sky. "You asked those who the animal man's words were bitter for them and didn't get what they wanted." Irvyn said while he was looking at the street.
When they reached the middle of Freeman Street, they stopped. They lit the narrow alley in the

middle of the street by bringing their torches closer. They entered the narrow alley. The alley was long and narrow like a snake; so that only one person could fit in it. Brad went ahead. Irvyn and Adgar followed behind him. The long, narrow alley led them to the Animal man's house, which seemed to be the only house there. Brad reached the end of the alley. The gate of the house was made of broken sticks tied together with rope. Brad opened the door by pushing. They entered the house one by one. Various sounds came from the house: the roar of the lion, the cry of the deer, the meow of the cat, the howl of the wolf, the barking of the dog, the noise of the crow and other types of animals and birds. It was dark inside the house. Adgar carefully moved the torch in his hand to the sounds that were coming. A lion roared loudly. Adgar got scared and stepped back. His back hit the cages, which suddenly caused various noises. He turned and moved the torch closet to the cages. He saw many animals in large and small cages. A man with his eyes closed came forward. He was wearing a big black dress and his sleeves were so long that his

hands could not be seen. "Are you afraid of animals?" he asked Adgar.
"Not all of them, only the wild ones and the big ones." Adgar replied calmly.
Irvyn looked at the cages one by one. He gently touched each one with his finger. He reached the closed-eye man and said: "I think you like animals a lot. With the animals placed in cages; you have created a forest for yourself here, but without trees. It reduces a bit of its charm. Tell me, why do you want all these animals?"
"Animals are not like humans, they are different!" The animal man replied. "They see, hear and feel the things that humans cannot understand. Their survival instinct is much stronger than humans. We think with our intellect and decide what is right or wrong, but they do with their instinct. This sense of instinct helps them to be aware of sudden events. When a natural event occurs, the first creatures that understand something's going on are animals and they warn humans with their behavior, but humans are too proud to not notice it. Their pride and self-confidence will destroy them. I know the language of animals. I can

predict future events with their help; Therefore, I have collected these animals. Why are you here?"
"Thank goodness you don't have an elephant!" Adgar said.
The Animal man raised his sleeve. The voice of the elephant could be heard. "How did you make it through the narrow alley!?" Adgar said in surprise.
"I know its way"
Irvyn sat in a chair behind a table. On the table, there were various colored glasses with different snakes inside, of course alive! Irvyn picked up one of the glasses. The snake opened its eyes and shook its head. It came close to the glass with his open mouth, which had sharp teeth, and hit the glass. Irvyn watched the snake struggle to break the glass with excitement. He put the glass on the table. "A few days ago, there was an earthquake in the Troylo's harbor. It caused a lot of damage to us and other Houses. I want to know if you can predict with these strange animals whether there is another earthquake or not? And if it is, where and when will it happen?"
Animal Man opened a cage. A monkey came out

with a chain attached to his leg and sat on his shoulders. Adgar wish he could cut his stomach with his sword. Brad, who had been to the Animal man's house before, was familiar with the situation and showed no interest. Animal man sat in his special chair and said: "When the earthquake comes; That is, before its arrival, the birds will begin their flight, not alone, but in groups. The deer will scream, but not loud enough to reach the earthquake. The ants drop the seeds they carry on the ground and move their homes to another place, but they are not fast enough to do so. The next earthquake will shake not only the North, but the whole world. I don't know when it will come."

"I'm not talking about the Final day and the frost." Irvyn said. "I am talking about a small earthquake that covers a small area. Can you tell me or not?"

The Animal man raised his voice a little: "I didn't talk about the Final day either. I'm talking about the two-faced walkers, about the Mountain of Conqueror. I can say that one day the Dead child will conquer the Mountain of Conqueror."

Irvyn was curious. "Dead child! What will happen when he conquers? He asked
"He sees what he shouldn't."
"Like what?"
"The deads" Animal man said firmly.
He took his hands out of his long sleeves. He had withered hands that had become bony. He put his hand close to Irvyn and wanted to touch him. He screamed as his hand touches Irvyn's skin. He quickly pulled his hand away. A drop of blood came from his closed eyes. "What did you do?"
"What do you mean?" Irvyn said.
"You did something you shouldn't have done!"
"I do not understand. What are you talking about?"
"You used the darkness of the middle white to kill someone, didn't you?"
Irvyn stood up. "So what?"
The Animal man wiped the drops of blood with his fingers. "You have to repay. The darkness has spread its wings and is flying towards you. Only death can cut off its wings. Even when it doesn't reach its destination, it doesn't stop flying."
"Whose death?" asked Irvyn.

"Maybe you! Maybe another one! I don't choose this one."
Adgar pulled out his sword and pointed it at the Animal man. "Now I'll kill you and all your animals here, then you can see the darkness, crazy man!"
Irvyn ordered to sheathe his sword. "We must go before he condemns the entire Vach to death or darkness." Adgar told Irvyn.
"Has this ever happened to anyone?" Irvyn asked.
"Very little. At different times, in different places and for different purposes."
"How should it be prevented?"
The Animal man laughed and said: "You used the eye of darkness, and now the darkness wants to use your eye. In the end, its goal is to open your book, and if it opens your book, you will become one of the soldiers of darkness."
"I think we're done here." Irvyn said.
The strange things that were said about him had worried him. Half of his being believed them. He spent the night awake and thinking about that day. During the day, his mind was constantly busy with the words of the Animal man; he

couldn't get them out of his mind. Adgar advised him: "those types of people only want to scare people; because that's what they do, and they cause terror to others." Before leaving the animal man's house, Adgar's eyes were locked on his ugly monkey and cursed them all the way to the mansion. He wished they never went there.

The Sword's Nepp Castle looked like a standing sword from the north. Irvyn said to himself: "the Darkness can fly towards me with its wings, that is, towards the sword!"

They arrived at the gate of the castle. After all those adventures that had lasted almost a tweek and a few days more, they missed home. Of the seven people who left, five returned. They had lost Sir Baren Derell and Sir Farly Rad in the Black Mountains by the northern raiders. After they entered the castle, Irvyn ordered to explain to their families what had happened to them and that their families would be cared for by the House of Ritanion. Irvyn walked towards the big sword tower in the center and wanted to go to his room. Rylord Brant stopped him on the way. "My Lord, a letter from the capital with a strange seal

was brought to you here a few days ago by a rider."
He took out the letter from his pocket and gave it to him. Irvyn saw the seal on the letter. The seal was like a round apple and the letter "A" was engraved in the middle. Irvyn opened the letter in surprise. He read the first sentence. "To Lord Irvyn Ritanion, Lord of the Sword's Nepp and Warden of the North. I am Aramis, and of course, alive!"

Chapter 12
Highwill
The unity

He was told that he had been unconscious for two days. After he was brought back by Troy, the apprentice doctor covered his wound with an herbal remedy. When Doctor Smith arrived, he pulled out the small steel blade of Ray's sword with the help of his apprentice. The blade was so sharp that it penetrated deeply into his body. He had lost a lot of blood. The doctor said he would recover and regain full health in the next few tweeks by the herbal remedies and foods that he had prescribed. His bandaged scar still hurt. The pain was not severe, but it bothered him a little. He covered his bandaged body with a robe. He sat on the bed. His hair was messy and a little wet from the sweat. He shook his right hand. He thought to himself: "I can't fight!" He got up from

the bed in difficulty, he wanted to leave the room. When he got to the door, his mother opened the door. She had a tray full of food in her hand. Fresh milk, toasted bread and lamb meat were on the tray. She quickly put the tray on the bed and held his hand as she saw William got up. "You need to rest. Your scar is still fresh. Dr. Smith said that it'll heal in about two tweeks."

His mother helped him to sit on the bed again. "I can't just lay on this damn bed every day and pray that I get better soon." Will said. "I need to go outside. I want to feel fresh air, ride horses, go hunting and fight."

His mother got angry. "Don't talk about fighting. Ray almost killed you."

"Mom, Ray's my brother." Will said. "We may not have the same mother, but he is my brother. He would never do that. It was an accident. I don't have any grudges against Ray about that. Meanwhile, this year the Midnyter competition will be held in Whiteel. I want to go there with Troy. I can't go when I am sick. So, I will get better by walking and being active."

"You'll get better by resting."

"At least help me go to the great hall and have breakfast with my family. In this way, I won't be alone, please."
In the great hall, there was a large table, about seven feet long, at the end of it. The chairs were placed facing each other. John Highwill was sitting at the head of the table. His children were around him. As William entered, the maid pulled a chair from the table. William gently sat on it with the help of his mother. John ordered to leave him alone with his sons. "I'm sorry I ruined your beautiful morning," Will said.
"That's your routine." her sister wyveen grumbled.
After the others left, John asked: "How are you?"
After drinking a glass of milk, Will looked at his father. "I'm getting better. Better than yesterday!"
"Have you decided to travel to Whiteel with Troy for the Midnyter competition at next month?"
"Yeah, as soon as I can." Will said.
His father didn't say anything. He took a loaf toasted bread, he wanted to spread some honey on it with a knife. Will was surprised by the silence that had been created. He raised his head, looked

at his brothers' face and asked: "Did something happen?"
"We're going together." John said.
"Is there any specific reason or are you doing it for William's condition?" Ray asked.
"Father, if it's for me, it's all right." Will said. "I mean, it's not necessary."
Taimen stopped eating. He knew that his father had a special reason for leaving, so he did not interfere and waited for his father to speak. John explained: "Time is running out and the Final day is drawing near. The Final day begins when the darkness of the middle white turns a Night-white-day of the world into darkness. There is not much time left until that day. My father told me that on the Final day, when all the separated lands get together, the main enemy will show its true face! And when it comes, it's not alone, it comes with his allies. We must be ready for that day and we can't face it alone; so we need a strong ally. What's the best way to unity?"
"The marriage." Ray said.
"Osryn Talesky doesn't have a daughter, and if he had, he wouldn't give her to the House of

Highwill, nor Norris Ritanion. Henry never had a daughter either, but the House of Rking has several daughters to marry. They have never joined the Houses of Vach since they were formed, so they have no interest in doing that now either."
Will placed the knife on the table. "I guess it happened once." he pointed out. "Ellvy's story is about this."
Taimen said: "Brother, Ellvy's story is a myth, not a reality."
Ray looked at his father. "Then only the House of Retigan is left!"
"Yes." John confirmed. "For Egan Retigan's first daughter, The House of Whiteel proposed marriage, but Egan refused. If he accepts your proposal to marry his daughter, he can be a good ally in the future. But it all depends on you. What do you think?"
"Whatever you say, Father. If this decision is good for the future of Highwill, I don't mind." Ray said without thinking.
"Good." John said.
John got up from his chair. He was about to leave

the hall when he remembered something. "Taimen?"
Taimen turned and replied: "Yes, father."
"Rylord Clint, who is in a sick bed, had made a request. He wants to be replaced by a boy named Allen. Allen lives in Paradise on Silverown. I wanted to send Ray, but Ray must stay in Irence. I want you to go to Paradise and bring Allen here. Sykin will accompany you in this journey."
Will gently grabbed the handle of his chair and stood up. "Sykin can't leave the Ventos!"
"He can't leave the land of Ventos, but he can go on water as long as it lasts." John said.
William was leaning on a wall in the stone tower, watching Troy's archery practice. Troy's golden hair was sweaty from the intensity of the movements and reached to his eyes. He pushed them back with his hand to have a better vision. He took an arrow. He took a deep breath. He moved the arrow on the bow. He aimed carefully at a circular sign. He released the arrow a moment later with his thumb and index finger. The arrow released but it broke before hitting the target in the middle of the way by an ax. Troy lowered the

bow and asked: "Why?"
William had hit the arrow with an ax. "I'm too sick to participate in the competitions; I can't even walk easily and move myself. This is my only chance to become a Midnyter." He said.
Troy put the bow in its place. He came closer and sat down next to him. "Maybe you don't have to be a Midnyter. You can become a knight, like your brother."
"This is the dream I have had since I was a child. I can't just forget about it. I feel bad about myself. Maybe I'm unlucky."
With the help of a long stick that was next to him, he lifted himself up. Troy wanted to help him, but he refused. He wanted to take care of himself alone. He brought himself to the bow with a stick. He put an arrow in its string. He took the arrow to the target and pulled it halfway. "I can't shoot with this damn thing!" he sighed.
He pulled it with all his strength. The arrow was released. His eyes sparkled. The arrow was approaching the target. It was only a few inches away when it suddenly broke. He looked at Troy. "God damn you!"

Dr. Smith changed his bandage every day. He advised him to eat hot food like barley soup. His father had told him that they would leave on the 11th of Tweek. There were four days left until the promised day. Will tried to prepare himself for the fight, but his wound showed his inability to swing the sword.

The day of the move has come. The weather was very hot. The sun had brought its heat into the Will's room. Will looked at the sword that his father had given him. He thought to himself that he couldn't use it for a few months. He had to give up on his dream. Even if he was healthy, he would face hard rivals in the competition. Each of them was a legendary fighter and the chances of winning against them were too low; At least if he was healthy, he could participate, but now he had lost the chance. He tied the sword to his waist sadly. He heard the sound of the trumpets. He moved out. Walking became easier for him. He could walk well without taking the wood as a stick, but not too fast! He was ready to move with his father and their men. His father was sitting on their horses with Sir Iker May, Edison Berk, Sir

Quent Mace, Troy Vent and some other guards. John had decided to go to the five-star harbor and travel to the land of released Phoenix, Whiteel. His mother was standing to see him off. When Will got to the yard, he kissed her head. The trumpets sounded again. Will sat on his horse without anyone's help. He took the Horse halter and waited for the gate of the castle to open. He looked at his brothers. Taimen and Ray were standing side by side. John turned his horse, moved towards the opened gate. The others followed him. William was the last of them.

In the middle white of the second day, they reached the needle-shaped castle near the five-star harbor. Spikneedle Castle was ruled by the House of Lann, which was one of the flagships of Highwill. It is said that during the construction of the castle, thousands of long needles were placed between the stones of its walls so that when the castle was destroyed, the needles would be thrown to those who destroyed the castle. Seeing the stones of the wall, Will wanted to take one of the stones and see if it was true or not. But he knew it was forbidden to do so, so he looked at the flags.

Flags with the design of "Standing needle with a moon on top" were seen on the walls of the castle. Welcomed by Lord Lann, they entered the castle to spend the night there. In the daylight, the sound of metal clashing woke William from his sweet sleep. Along with the sound of metals, he heard the sound of breathing from behind the door. Will thought that the servants had brought him breakfast and were standing at the door. He opened the door suddenly. A young girl who was not more than fourteen years old was standing behind the door solemnly and silently. Her face was full of yellow freckles. She was shocked when the door opened. She lowered her head and said: "Forgive ... forgive me... my Lord. I didn't want to disturb you. My father ordered me to wake you up for morning. I waited for you to wake up. I thought that it is disrespectful to wake you up. So if you forgive me, I will leave."

The girl left in a hurry. Her sharp breaths could be heard from the end of the corridor. "That was weird." Will whispered.

Inside the needle-shaped castle was curved. It had a winding corridor that was difficult to find at the

entrance to the hall. Will came out of his room. He came to the end of the corridor that the girl had gone. There were two ways in front of him that the ends were unclear. He thought to himself: Which of them did I come from last night? He scratched his head. Each of them sounds familiar to him. Finally he chose one. He went ahead. He reached the big columns that were seen together. He crossed the big columns one after another. When he reached the last, he realized that he had returned to the first point. He wanted to go back to the first two way, but he was stuck between the columns. He turned around for a few times. He became angry and leaned on one of the columns. He reviewed all the ways with himself. He got up after a few minutes. He tried all the ways again and finally reached the first two ways. He went on the other side. The end of it reached the staircase, he went down the stairs. A boy was sitting on the last step and petting a rabbit that was next to him. Will came to the last step, looked at the boy. "What was that weird corridor full of columns?" he asked.

The boy hugged the rabbit. "It ends in a hot

water bath. Follow the corridors according to the map engraved on the stone wall and you will reach the hot water bath."
Will got surprised. "The map was on the wall! How come I didn't see it?"
"You probably didn’t pay attention." the boy replied.
Lord Lann sent his eldest son with Jon and his men to go with them to Whiteel and try his luck at the Midnyter competition. The boy was tall and thin like the needle in their family flag. He also had a long face. His hair was the same as color of his clothes, it was gray. He was called the needle snake. After John arriving in Spikneedle, needle snake trained with Troy. It was a good fight, but the competition needs great fighters. Troy prepared himself for the toughest and most difficult opponents. Will just gave up on/about the competition. With his difficult situation, keeping himself on his feet without a help was a blessing for him. Before leaving the castle of Spikneedle, Will took a hot water bath. When they arrived at the harbor, they boarded a ship called the Start, which was bound for Whiteel.

The captain of the ship was a man named Fytch, who was called the burnt mustache. When Will saw his waved mustache for the first time, there was no burn mark on it. All the strands of his mustache were black and of the same size. He had heard from one of the crew that his mustache had been burned by his lover for infidelity. Fytch had filled its place with another man's mustache who had cut his lip with along with his mustache a knife. He had attached the man's lip to his lip with a thread. Over time, the lip had completely filled the burn and made it look more beautiful than its previous days. Each time that Will looked at his mustache, Fytch stared at him. Then he twirled his mustache with his hand. So Will reluctantly stopped looking. Will came on the deck of the ship. The silver moon shines in the night sky. Captain Fytch was standing at the helm of the ship, with a compass in his hand. He steered the ship towards the directed path with the helm of the ship. Lifting his head from the compass, he called out to Will, who was staring out to sea. "John Highwill's second son, right?
After hearing the voice, Will looked at him. His

eyes locked on his mustache. He remembered the stories that the crew had told him about the captain. He thought to himself: "What a cruel thing he has done to cut someone else's lip with a knife and sew it to his own." As he thought, Fytch asked again: "Right?"
"Yeah, I am." Will replied.
Fytch handed over the helm to one of the crew. He came to Will. He twirled his mustache. "Do you want to know the real story? Or do you believe the story that I told people?"
"Yeah, I want to know what happened." Will moved his lips slowly.
"Come closer. Let me show you the truth." Fytch said.
"I can see from here."
He took his hand under his upper lip and gently pulled it. The lip was separated along with mustache. His upper teeth were clearly visible. Half of his teeth were silver. "This is the truth!" He said.
"What is this?" Will panicked.
Fytch explained: "During one of my trips, my partner betrayed me. He left me on a remote

island with a dog to die. He didn’t give me any food. There was no way to get back. The island was abandoned; Even the smallest animal wouldn't roam. The dog and I somehow became friends. I searched the entire island. We ate the birds, fishes and insects as much as possible. For a long time no ship came to the island's shores. One day, when both of us were extremely hungry, I fell asleep. I was sleep that I felt scary pain. The dog with his sharp teeth cut my lip. You can see that it has been carefully cut! I got up frightened. I was screaming and getting rid of the dog. I killed the dog with the stone that was next to me. For ten days, I ate my best friend's meat, the dog. My motivation to survive was to revenge; so I got ready for that day. One day chance came back to me. A boat was on its way to the island and took me to inside a big ship. I was wearing a cloth around my mouth so that people wouldn't be afraid of seeing me. I searched for my partner everywhere. I finally found him. One night I entered the ship that belonged to me. I went to his private cabin. I killed him with the knife in my hand. After killing him, I made a exact cut

with a knife the size of my cut lip. It was pure madness, but I knew it was his fault that made me the way I am. So, he had to pay back and of course, he did. After cutting his lips, I attached it to my lips."
He put the lip back in place. "And I became like this."
Will looked at him doubtfully. "I was just kidding!" Fytch suddenly laughed.
"You're crazy!" Will said.
"The craziest captain of the Vach and the world." Fytch said. “But if you bump into me again, I will tell you the real story. I swear, Lord Highwill. Go rest, we will arrive in Whiteel tomorrow."

Chapter 13
Highwill Phoenortalix

Phoenortalix Castle was considered the second impregnable castle of the Five Kingdoms after Irence. The tallest castle in the Vach, over a thousand feet high. The castle had been built by the last exceptional child of Olyns the Conqueror, Arolian Ness. According to legends, Arolian built the upper part of the castle with the help of a phoenix. The Phoenix made the work easier for the workers of that time by bringing the stones up. He used to set the stones on top of each other with the silver light that came out of his breath. The construction of the castle took more than a decade. On the night of the opening of the castle, the phoenix flew over it and the light that was left in the layers of the stones of the building shone so brightly that it made the whole of Whiteel silver

like moonlight. The Retigans believed that seven phoenixes flew into the dark sky at the beginning of the world and created the moon with the silver light coming out of their breaths at the same time. The phoenix nest was built on top of the castle, and after the last phoenix was killed in the battle of Time, it had become a sightseeing place for today's curious humans. Today, interesting stories are told about it for children who, seeing the Phoenortalix castle, visualized themselves with the last phoenix, whose name was Last Light. Arolian once went to the sky with Last Light to bring light to his people in the dark time and defeat the first Conqueror of Time, Valenlaint called the Dark Laint. William had heard the stories, too. He had come to Whiteel once he was a child and had seen the castle up close then. He had forgotten its greatness, but now, looking at the gate of the castle with a phoenix head carved on it, he remembered everything. He looked up to it. He bent his head further so that he could see the end of it. The walls of the fort were getting smaller from the bottom to the top. There were archers standing every hundred feet and guarding the

castle. The giant gate of the castle opened. The knights of Whiteel came out to welcome. "Lord Egan Retigan is waiting for you." one of them said.

The inside of the castle was different than the outside. Magnificent buildings and towers were located next to each other, the height of which reached at half of the walls of the castle. The iron roof of the castle looked like the first quarter of the moon, which covered half of the roof, and the phoenix nest was located on top of it. From the other half of the roof, sunlight shone into the castle and lighted it up. The riders went inside led by the knights. The hosts were standing next to the big building where they lived. The small buildings around it belonged to the knights, servants and workers of the castle. There was a spiral staircase on the eastern side of the castle with a lifter in the middle. With the help of the central lifter and the stairs around it, one could go to the highest point of the castle, that is, the Phoenix's nest. Egan Retigan stood at the forefront. His beard was almost as silver as his hair. He was short, but he was standing in front of

his family, with strong figure. Behind him, his wife Lady Mealona, his son Argan and his eldest daughter Immy were present along with the people of the castle. As John dismounted, Egan Retigan came forward. "The last of Highwills has come to visit the silver phoenixes! What an honor! We must to celebrate for this occasion." He said.
He saw Will. "Is he your second son?"
"Yes, The second one." John replied.
"That adventurous boy who was lost behind our walls?"
"Yeah, he is."
"Honestly, at first I couldn't believe that the son of the last Highwill was so far away from home." Egan said. "When I looked into his eyes, I said to myself: Yes, you are definitely John's son!"
They all smiled. Members of the house of Retigan were introduced to John.
At the party that was held at night, the Retigans prepared wonderful meals. All kinds of food were prepared: drinks, sweets, cakes, grilled meat, chicken and turkey. Its smell permeated the entire the great hall. The musicians were standing in a row upstairs and playing harps. The sounds could

be heard clearly by the high ranking Lords of Whiteel who were sitting next to John Highwill, but faintly at the end of the hall, where William had separated himself from the rest. A clown also makes people laugh by making faces to warm up the party atmosphere. William was sitting away from the hosts and wanted to be less visible. Troy was sitting next to him. He eagerly drunk up his glass and looked at the Lords of Whiteel. He thought to himself and guessed which of their children he will fight in the battlefield. In his mind, he imagined becoming the Midnyter. He took the grilled chicken from the plate, took a small bite and motioned William to eat. Will refused his request. "What's your problem?" Troy said. "Why don't you eat? It's a pity to waste all this food!"

"Nothing, I just don't feel like eating. I'm looking at that ridiculous clown. He doesn't know his job at all. Pity the money that is paid to him. If they give Vince that money, his job will be ten times better, more attractive and more spectacular than him. With his art, he can make everyone in the hall laugh, only with one hand! Father never likes

a clown; that's why our castle has no clowns and Vince's talents were wasted. Do you remember when we were kids, Vince would secretly gather all the kids in the Peace Tower and perform a show."
"Yeah, I remember." Troy looked at the clown. "You're probably right."
Will picked up the brass cup. He looked inside. it was orange. He drank the glass halfway. It tasted like orange. A person with silvery hair sat on a chair in front of them. He was tall and handsome.
"Do you want to be a Midnyter?"
"I can't." Will said. "Because of..."
"The blade of the Green Knight's sword hit you and you were injured, I know!" Argan interrupted.
Surprised looks were exchanged between Will and Troy. "Birds also fly to Phoenortalix." Argan continued.
"How fast!" Will smiled. "Since I can't, so this golden haired young man is a good competitor for the other fighters. Are you participating too?"
"No, I'm not interested in becoming the Midnyter." Argan replied.

Will was playing with an apple on the table when he respectfully asked: "Last time that I came here, I saw your younger sister whose name I forgot in the White Forest and she brought me to Phoenortalix. I don't want to be disrespectful, I'm just wondering, I haven't seen her since we got here. Did something happen to her? "
"His name is Celins." Argan said. "Do you want to see her?"
"Yeah, if that's okay with you and your family." Will replied.
"Alright, then follow me."
Will got up. He suggested Troy to stay and enjoy the rest of the party. He saw his father having a good time with Lord Retigan. He thought to himself that they're probably planning for Ray and Immy's wedding. Knowing his father, he knew that he wanted to hold the wedding in Irence; so he had to pull the Retigans out of their phoenix nest. He went out after Argan. Outside, torches of different colors were lit, which were called White fire. The Retigans used the remaining phoenix feathers to light the White fire, which was twice as bright as a normal fire.

Argan picked up one of those torches. They went to the lifter on the eastern side of the castle. After entering the lifter, Argan pulled the lever and the lifter moved up. "Will you take me to the top of the castle, to the phoenix nest?" Will asked.
"Not very high. If you look carefully from below during the day, there is a room built in the middle of the inner wall, which is said to have been made by my ancestor, Arolian, for his wife."
"Why?" Will asked.
"For peace, I guess."
Argan stopped the lifter. They got out of the lifter. They walked in the corridor leading to the room, which was about fifty feet away. Argan opened the door slowly when they reached the room. Will walked into the room. A beautiful girl, such an angel, was sleeping on the bed. Her silvery hair had turned yellow because of the direct sunlight. Next to her bed, there were dried flowers of purple, red, pink, blue, green, white and yellow colors. There were candles with the White light beside them. She wore a purple dress with a beautiful embroidery. A phoenix ring was hanging around his neck. Her eyes were closed,

but her breathing could be heard. Will could also hear her heart beating. He approached her bed, saw her calm face. Her skin was white as the middle white. "We call her Sleeping Beauty." Argan said. "She has been sleeping on this bed for nine years. The last time she was awake, we were playing in the White forest when she climbed a tree, the tree branch broke and suddenly she fell on the ground and fainted. No matter how much I called her, she did not answer. My father loves her very much. He comes here every day and prays for her. He believes that one day she will open her eyes. I miss her so much, I'm just waiting for that day. "

"How did you give her food and water to survive?"

"We don't, the only foods are good air and sunlight. Do you see those white candles?"

"Yeah." Will replied.

"They've never turned off since we turned them on. She keeps the candles burning with her breath."

"Like a phoenix!" Will said in surprise.

The lifter led them down to the ground. William

looked at Celins Retigan's room. The room was lost in the moonlight and looked like a small dot. They went back to the great hall for the party. The musicians had become silent. The clown was dirty with sweets, cakes and food thrown at him. Children made fun of him. Some of the food was spilled on the floor and the servants were cleaning it up. Troy was talking to the knights and some other guards about the competition. His lord father had left the hall with Egan Retigan. Lady Mealona was sitting with her daughter Immy in the special place and was looking at the guests. A man hit his glass hard on the table. The sound was like a hammer hitting a spike and it was unexpected. The whole hall became silent like a cemetery. All the attentions were focused on him. He had a disheveled face with silvery like colored hair. His eyes looked sad. While he was walking, he insulted each of the guests. His tears were about to fall. "Sit down and shut up or get out! You're embarrassing us in front of our guests." Argan said.

Argan's cousin, Ewan Retigan, said: "You don't talk Argan. This party should become the best

party of the century."
He opened his hands. The brass cup slipped from his hand and fell to the ground. He stood in front of the big table and finished his sentence: "shouldn't it?"
He grabbed from under the table and lifted it suddenly. The table with all the food and drinks on it moved towards the guests. The sound of more than fifty swords being pulled out from their scabbards was heard. The men pointed their swords at both the guest and the host. Argan struggled to interrupted, but a sword appeared in front of his throat, warning him not to move. Will was standing next to Argan, who had a dagger pointed at him from behind and was scratching his back. Troy was sitting on a chair, watching the scene, and counting the swords. He also couldn’t move. Ewan, who was controlling the situation in his own way, went to Immy Retigan. "This is madness!" said Lady Mealona.
"You'll see the real madness in a moment, my lady." Ewan said.
"Close all the doors." he shouted to his men. "This show is going to be bigger and bigger."

He laughed hysterically then looked at Immy. "I've always loved you. Don't you see that all of this is because of you? If you had accepted, this would never have happened. If you accept, we would be happy. We celebrated our wedding in the nest, then we had children and lived together until the Final day. But now, the situation has changed. If you are not going to be mine, then I won't let you to be someone else's."
He pointed at Immy with trembling hands. "I won't let you… I won't let you."
His voice was getting louder. "I WON'T LET YOU!" He shouted.
"You're not well." Argan said. "Finish it right now. You still have time. I promise you that you will survive."
Ewan turned back. He was taking short steps. "He wants to leave me alive! Did you hear that? HE WANTS TO LEAVE ME ALIVE! Of course not now, my lord! I think you still don't understand the current situation well, my dear cousin. I'll do something that you will understand it well!"
He pulled out a dagger from his waist. He held the dagger with both hands with a selfish look.

He glared at Argan. He threw the dagger at one of John Highwill's men, who was Egan Retigan's guest of honor. The dagger hit his throat and tore it like silk. The man was trying to pull it out, but his hands were tightly held by his men. The man died after struggling. "You will pay the price!" Will became angry.

Ewan motioned one of his men to pull the dagger out from the poor man's throat. One of his men pulled the dagger out and threw it at him. After taking the dagger, Ewan cleaned it with the clothes of one of the guests. He laughed humiliatingly. He was moving the dagger from his right hand to his left hand. He stood in front of William. His height was up to Will's chin. "The price will be paid with your blood, Highwill!" he said.

"Let him go." Argan said nervously. "If one more person dies in here, I swear, I will turn the Phoenortalix castle red with your blood."

Ewan took his eyes from William and moved closer to Argan. He moved his head up and down. He put the dagger on his mouth and looked at him thoughtfully. A moment later, he broke the

silence: "I haven't started yet! Before I kill..."
He pointed at Immy with the dagger, then continue: "YOUR DEAR SISTER! I want to make her suffer, by killing you first!"
Argan was gnashing his teeth in rage. He wanted to take him to the valley in an instant with the speed of Olyns the conqueror and throw him down from there. But Olyns the Conqueror had the infinity sword and he had a steel sword; He couldn't even pull it out to kill. If he made a wrong move, the sword would cut his throat like that dead man. "If you kill me, or my sister, or anyone else, or even everyone in this hall, you know what will happen to you in the end." Argan said.
Ewan laughed, then said: "in the end, the Final day will come and we will all die."
He held the dagger near Argan's eye and continue: "Before the Final day comes, I will bring the Final day to everyone in this beautiful place."
He threw the steel dagger in a special direction. The dagger pierced the heart of a woman who fell from the main seat of the house of Retigan. Lady

Mealona Retigan, with the dagger in her heart, tried to say something, but the blood came out of her mouth and stopped her muffled voice. Immy ran to her as she screamed. She took the cold and lifeless body of her mother in her warm hands. She was crying and moaning: "MOTHER… NO…MOM…NO."

"This is for my love!" Ewan said.

Argan closed his eyes. Tears of blood were flowing from his eyes. Ewan was crazy and shouted: "THIS IS FOR MY LOVE! THIS IS FOR MY LOVE!"

He went to Immy. He sat on his knees near her and looked at her wet face. "I told you, if you had accepted, none of this would have happened. But you broke my heart! So I broke yours to make up. Now we're even. Do you see this dagger inside your mother's heart? I wanted to give you as a gift on our wedding day. My gift pierced your mother's heart!"

He whispered in her ear: "My gift...My gift..."

He stood up, lowered his head, and laughed hysterically again: "The show isn't over yet!"

He ordered to make Argan kneel. One of his men

hit Argan on the head with the back of his sword. Argan fell to the ground after being hit. A sword was held in front of his face. "Kneel!"
Argan, who was incensed, and his head was spinning due to the impact. He had to kneel down. Immy was whispering: "kill him, Argan! Kill him!"
Ewan looked at Amy in surprise and said: "Kill him? Okay, I'll kill him.... I'll grant your wish, my love."
He went to Argan. He stood in front of him. Argan's tearful eyes were locked on his eyes. One of his men gave Ewan a sword. He took the sword with his right hand and said: "This is the last wish of my love. I'm sorry, dear cousin."
He raised his sword. He was about to hit Argan's neck when the door opened. Lord Retigan's knights rushed in with spears, and swords and bows. Troy tripped a man up who was distracted. The man fell to the ground. He took his sword and finished him quickly. The others also took this opportunity. Lord Retigan's knights filled almost the entire hall. Egan Retigan and John Highwill also entered the hall. Seeing his wife's

fallen body, Egan ran towards her. John ordered them to drop their swords and surrender. "Never!" Ewan said.
He took the sword over Argan's head again. This time, he wanted to finish him without delay, when an arrow hit his leg and the sword was released from his hand. His men were all surrounded. Those who surrendered lived and those who resisted died. Argan got up. He took the fallen sword. "Finish it!" Ewan said while he were on his knees.
Argan held the sword beside his neck and said: "Not like this!"
He hit him in the face with the back of the sword. Ewan fell unconscious on the ground with an arrow in his leg...

Chapter 14
Highwill
The phoenix is released!

"**I**n the Name of God, the All Merciful, the Ever Merciful, and the One and Only. We are gathered here to bury Mealona Retigan, the Lady of Talix, in your merciful ground. just as one day you give birth to us and one day you take us away from the world. These two days are the most important days of a person, which will never be forgotten. Today is Mealona Retigan's second day."
These were the words that keyman Kyle was saying. The family tomb of the Retigans was located about two hundred yards from the beach. The gravediggers had dug the grave. Four members of the crew were holding the heavy stone coffin from each side and were carrying it

towards the grave. The sound of thunder was heard from the sky. The sky took on purple streaks and rain began to fall from the gray clouds. The servants increased their speed so as not to get wet in the rain. They gently put the stone coffin into the grave. Egan Retigan ordered them to open the coffin in the grave so that he and his children could see her face one last time. Two servants opened two stones that were connected together. Egan could see his wife's white face, which was getting wet by the raindrops. Her eyes were closed like the sleeping beauty; only with the difference that her heart stopped beating. Her body was relaxed and didn't move anymore. Losing his wife had weakened him a bit. He remembered when his father had first brought his wife to the phoenix nest to marry him. He had seen her beautiful face for the first time in the nest. They vowed there. Egan whispered the last words, "You and I belong together until..." At that moment, Mealona Retigan belonged to soft soil. Argan and Immy were standing behind their father. After the coffin was closed, the servants placed the stones together

and came out of the grave, then they poured dirt on it. John Highwill stepped forward. "I'm sorry for your loss. Maybe it's my fault. If I..."
"No, it's not your fault, John." Egan interrupted. "We all know well whose fault it is."
Five hundred swordsmen lowered their swords in salute. Representatives from all Vach Houses were sent to the competition. They were all gathered for the funeral of Mealona Retigan. Their flags were soaked in the rain. They took turns picking up their swords from the ground, which had been arranged in a special arrangement. They walked towards the castle. The house of Retigan sat on the carriage and the others followed them on their horses. William and his father were on their horses in the front row, which was in front of the their carriage. The rain almost stopped after the funeral. The sun had come out among the gray clouds and was shining its bright light on the ground. A rainbow had formed far away from William, but he could clearly see its beautiful colors shining and twinkling in the sunlight. On the way Sir Ascott Arwood escorted the fighters and knights to the fighting field. The others

continued on their way to Phoenortalix Castle. They reached the castle before the middle white came. The carriage stopped behind the riders in front of the gate. As the gate opened and the riders entered, Egan Retigan and his children stepped out of the carriage. Two servants took carriage inside. Will brought his horse next to his father and said: "Father, do see that room up there? There lies Celins Retigan, Egan's second daughter. They called her sleeping beauty."
John looked up from his horse. A small room could be seen in the middle of the inner wall. "How did they make a room up there?" he asked.
"They used the Phoenix!"
"The Phoenixes are extinct." John said.
The gate of the castle was closed. Rexly Bede, commander of the guards, along with Sir Pryor Lowell, one on the left and one on the right of the gate, pulled chains on both sides of the gate. Will was standing next to his father under the semicircular iron roof. Rexly Bede pulled the chain firmly at the same time as Pryor. A semicircular iron went up from the ground. The iron was half of the completion of the upper roof,

which was placed on the ground. Will was stunned as he saw it. "Do you want to see the Phoenix nest?" Egan stood in front of John.
"Yeah, I guess."
They all stood on the raised iron roof. One of the guards gave Argan a bow with an arrow. Argan prepared the arrow. He looked at the wall from top to bottom. He raised the bow and shot the arrow without hesitation. After the arrow was released, it hit a rock and its tip broke. The stone went in a little, about an inch, and then went back to its place. Argan lowered the bow. The iron roof began to move upwards. While Will was stunned, Egan explained: "We call the second nest, the movable nest. After each climb, the stones of the wall move, and only the eyes of a Retigan can identify the right stone and set the movable nest in motion."
The movable nest made an annoying noise as it went up, but Will paid no attention to it. He was just looking around. The buildings below had become smaller for him and the semicircular iron roof, seemed getting bigger and closer to him! It didn't take long for the second nest to reach the

first nest and stop moving. The roof of Phoenortalix Castle was completely closed. As the roof of the castle closed, white torches were lit around the inner wall, bringing the castle out of its darkness. On the fixed nest, a full image of a phoenix was carved, whose eyes were like two silver stars. They went to the main stand and sat on the chairs made of carved stone. The guards had brought Ewan earlier than them from the lifter in the middle of the spiral staircase. They fixed him on the iron roof in place of the two eyes of the phoenix. His leg was limping from the arrow he had hit and he couldn't walk properly. His hands were shackled and his face was covered with a black bag. After bringing him to the two silver eyes of the phoenix, they removed the bag from his head. He opened and closed his eyes. He had spent the whole night in the dark until now. The sunlight hurt his eyes. After a while, his eyes got used to the daylight. He looked at the sky. The birds were moving southwards. He whispered something; in the way that the guards next to him didn’t hear. He looked at the audience. He knew all the faces; even the new

faces. He was looking for the face he wanted. He looked around again, but he was not there. "Where is my father?" he asked.
Argan got up and came to Ewan. "Uncle didn't want to see his son's execution. He went on a business trip to Poorvios to bear the shame from afar, not to look his dead son in the eye."
"It is fair. He has made a good decision. I would do the same if I were him. The past is the past; so what is in front of us matters. The decisions we make in the future are fateful. How would you do it? Beheading, throwing from the nest, hanging or shooting at my heart? This one is very romantic and poetic, isn't it, cousin?"
Argan said, "When the blade of my sword goes into your black heart, it becomes romantic and poetic."
With a nod, the guards forced Ewan to kneel. Rexly Bede was responsible for Evan's execution. Argan sat next to his father in the audience. Will and his father were also present and remembered the Phoenix nest with Evan's execution. Rexly Bede was preparing himself for doing it. Ewan was frowning. The end of his work had brought

him here. Everything happened so fast that he didn't have time to think about the consequence. Half of him was regretful and the other half was happy. Rexly's sword moved and went up. The sword stopped moving when with a loud sound.
"Wait!"
"What happened to Argan?" Egan said.
"Father, he killed my mother with brutality. I can't let him to die easily, that's not fair."
"What do you want to do?"
Argan got up from the stone chair. He went to Rexly Bede and took his sword from his hand. He stood in front of Ewan. Ewan looked at his angry face with surprise and concern. The sword was held above his head. Ewan lowered his head when he saw the blade in Argan's hand. After the sword landed, the sound of metal hitting metal was heard. Argan tore the chains from Ewan's hands. Argan turned to the audience and said to his father: "One-on-one fight to the death!"
"This is a mistake, Argan" Rexly said.
Egan nodded at his son's confident face. They threw another sword for Ewan in the movable nest. Argan lifted him up. "You have a chance to

survive until the arrival of the movable nest on the surface of the ground, and if you survive, I will release you."
Ewan said with a sarcastic smile on his lips: "Now it's time to grant my lover's wish!!!"
The lever was pulled so that the movable nest moved down. Argan was standing next to Ewan, watching the nest move down. "Why don't we go down?" Ewan said.
Argan brought him with himself to the edge of the fixed nest. Grabbing him, he threw them both on the moving iron. They landed with a strong impact on the iron. The movable nest was far from the ground. Time became so important for Ewan. Ewan picked up the sword that fell on the movable nest. "You are crazy!"
Ewan's injured leg hurt a lot when he landed. He struggled to stand on his two feet. With a sudden blow, Ewan was thrown to the edge. "This was unpredictable, but now the fight begins."
He got up. They were hitting each other which was effective. None of them had even a small wound from these blows. They reached the twenty-first blow. Ewan reached the edge of the

nest again. He looked down from there. There was nothing left until the ground, he quickly dragged himself to the middle of the nest. He dodged when Argan hit him. He wanted to kill the time till the movable iron reached the ground. Ewan deflected Argan's next blow and grabbed his wrist with his other hand. He hit him in the face with his elbow. Argan took a small step back after being hit, the sword fell from his hand and he felt dizzy. Ewan's sword made a superficial wound on his stomach with a quick movement. Argan put his hand on the wound. He saw red blood on his fingers, which scared him a bit. He stepped back; until he got close to the edge. There was nothing left to the ground and Ewan was still alive. His fear grew more and more. He saw his sword lying on the iron. "Are you disappointed, cousin?" Ewan said. "Your father must be the same, too! Also, I'm really sorry about your mother's death. You know what? I want to do you a favor. I will send you to your mother's place now!"

He attacked Argan. After deflected the blow, he caught his sword with his hands. Blood dripped

from his hands, which held the sword tightly. He hit him in the face with his head, dropped his sword and immediately picked up his own sword. He threw the sword at the wall around him. It hit a stone, the stone went inside and was placed back again .The movable nest stopped , then started to move again; Of course, this time upwards. Ewan was happy because they had almost reached the ground, but as the iron moved up, he turned and said. "What?"

Argan kicked him in the chest. He threw him off the edge of the nest. Argan looked at him happily. Ewan fell down with a scream. Argan could hear the sound of his bones breaking. His head was bloody from the hard impact. Argan laid down on the nest and looked at the sky; Even though he was injured, he felt very good. The sun was shining directly on him, he whispered. "This is right!"

William stared at the man sitting in the wooden wheelchair. The man's eyes were locked on a point. His hands were shaking, he couldn't talk and the most importantly, he couldn't walk anymore. From now on, he was called Broken

Ewan. Egan Retigan had killed him after falling from a haunted hangar. He had said: He's a dead right now and there is no need for execution. The first night he moaned a lot and woke up the whole castle. No one knew what he wanted. If he wet his clothes, the servants would understand the reason for his moaning. He had a paper in his hand and was pointing towards Will. Will was playing with the dagger in his hand. He took the paper and read on it: "Kill me!"

Will pointed the dagger at him. "I'm not a killer."

Ewan's face changed, his cheeks tightening, and he glared at Will. "And I won't." Will smiled.

"But I have to be today, otherwise..."

Will saw behind him. Troy stood anxiously. He said: "Today is the start of the competition. Are you coming too?"

Sitting on his knees in front of a Broken Ewan, Will looked away from him. "Do I have to come?"

"Yes, someone must accompany me. Who better than William Highwill! It makes me proud, my lord. If you accept me."

Will stood up. "I won't let you down."

"Thank you."
"Let me see if you can be Mid Troy Vent or not?"
"I'll do my best," Troy said.
A maid passed by them with a tray full of colorful flowers and a bowl full of water. He went to the lifter in the middle of the spiral staircase. Will watched her. The maid went into the lift. She was inside it for a few minutes, but the lifter didn't move. She shook the lever a few times. She heard a screeching sound, but still it didn't move. She came out of the lifter and passed Will again. "Are you taking these to Celins Retigan?" Will asked.
"Yes, the lifter is not moving." the maid said. "I think the chains are broken or something has happened to them. The blacksmith must fix them."
"He can't today. It will take at least a few days; since there are more than a thousand steps to the room and apparently you can't do this, give me the tray, I will do it."
The woman was surprised. "I can't. It is disrespectful to you, my lord. Lord Retigan will be upset about this."
"Calm down." Will said. "Don't worry, I promise

you won't have a problem. Give it to me, you go do your business."
Will gently took the tray from her hand. The maid bowed and left. "What are you doing?" Troy stopped him.
"You know, so why are you asking?"
"We have to go, it's getting late for the competition!"
"I'll catch up after I come down." Will said calmly.
"You promised! Are you kidding me now?
"I know that the competition will be held in the middle white, I will come before that. Go!"
"All right."'
The stairs were circular. William looked up, his eyes could only see the stairs. they seemed about two thousand stairs. He started counting from the first step and reached the 325th step. He sat on it. He thought to himself: Why did they built such stairs? When it is difficult to climb. It takes at least one middle white to go up! This woman wanted to go up and come back, it would probably take a day. His leg muscles cricked. He took a breather on the stairs for a few minutes.

Every hundred steps, he took a short rest. Finally, he reached the last step and blamed himself, why did he do this? After opening the door, he lay on the ground and gasped. His face was wet and he was looking at the flowers. One of the flowers became wilted. He wanted to drink the water in the bowl, but it was for Celins Retigan. After a while, he took the tray and moved towards the room. Inside the room, the Sleeping Beauty was lying on the bed. She hadn't moved since William had seen her. He put the flowers on the table next to her. He put a bunch of flowers into the water. He collected the dried flowers around her table and put them on the tray to take down. He pulled the curtain from the window so that the room was fully lit. He opened the window and leaned against it and looked down. He could see all the people in the courtyard in a smaller form. He was pointing at them with his finger. A man takes a cart carrying cabbage and vegetables to the kitchen. Will could pick up the cart in his imagination with two fingers and move it to the other side. His eyes caught something else. A silvery feather fell from the sky on the edge of the

window. It was bigger than normal feathers; even more beautiful! He was about to take it when a wind came and took it away. He stuck his head out of the window. Curiously, he watched the feather as it floated in the air and went somewhere. The feather soared up instead of going down; until it went up and disappeared. It was a phoenix feather. The feather had probably come out of the hall of the phoenix, where the last phoenix was buried, and the wind had moved it so... "Who are you?"

Will was focused on the silver feather. He looked down. Would it be possible to hear a sound from that height well? If the wind brought it, it would still be surprising. In addition, no one was paying attention to him in the yard and it was impossible to even see him from below. If someone saw him, why should they call him? And if they call, why should they ask who are he was. He turned back, new eyes blinking on his face. It was the same light brown as his own eyes, only brighter. "How is that possible?" he asked in amazement.

"Who are you?" Celins Retigan asked again.

"The Phoenix is released!" William said quietly so that she didn't hear.

Chapter 15
Azberns
Home

Skyglass was located in the heart of the Star City, on the high rocks whose greatness could be seen from every side of the city. The only structure that was not made by men. Valenlaint, the Conqueror of Time, when he was defeated on Ice Street by Olyns the Conqueror, accepted the peace between Sky and Earth and created the Skyglass to commemorate their defeat in the Battle of Time. Its blue glass from the gate of the sea looks like the King's sea, which were placed uniformly and seemed to shake with the wind. Peter Azberns watched the waving of glass by the gate. The room where he lived, its window panes were unrecognizable from that distance. The gate guards recognized him when they saw his golden hair. One of the guards was tall and stocky. He

was wearing shiny armor and a red cloak. His helmet was made of high quality and polished metal. he took it. His face was covered with red pimples and messy hair grew around his face. He asked to accompany Peter to Skyglass, but the prince refused and wanted to go to Skyglass alone; as he had lived alone for three years without a guardian or companion. He continued his way and reached the Life Street. He was wearing a formal dress that made him look like an ordinary person. There was no special pattern on his leather bodice made of snake skin and it was simple. In his opinion, the alleys and streets of the capital have not changed since the past three years. Only the people had changed. Some of the shops he knew had been closed and replaced by new ones. Most of the shops were run by old people, and few young people were seen in the shops. The usual clamor had subsided since his arrival in the city. He kept his head down and counted the stones he was stepping on. The raceway next to him was dry. A lot of garbage was piled inside and it smelled bad. As he was looking down and walking, his body bumped

someone and he softly whispered: "I'm sorry."
A force from behind pushed him to the ground and he fell on his hands. The hot-tempered man growled: "You're hitting on my wife, you idiot!"
Peter's palm was stretched when he fell on the ground and he got a small wound. He saw his hand while he was lying on the ground to see how bad it was. Red blood was on his palm. He got up. "What is your problem, giant bull? I said I'm sorry!"
The stubborn man frowned. "What a saucy boy! Don't make me throw you on the ground with just one hand!"
Peter looked at the woman standing next to him. Her face was bruised, she also had a sad face. He remembered Imotry Rking: she had a sad face when she said goodbye, but her face was full of tears instead of bruises. "Aren't you ashamed of you? did you beat the poor woman?" Peter said.
The man got furious. He fisted his hand and was about to attack Peter. He saw Peter's proud face before he punched him in the face. "Aren't you afraid?"
"Should I be?" Peter answered confidently.

"When your face becomes shiny like my wife's, then you will understand what fear is!"
Peter came forward, and said in a certain tone: "You know what? Like my father, I'm a forgiving man and I don’t hold grudges. I forgive your first mistake, but if you make another move or insult towards me after that, do you see those blue glasses? I will pour it all on you like ice rain. That day will be the Final day for you! You are so naive and stupid that you didn't find out who I am from my golden hair."
"One fifth of people in this city have golden hair. How am I supposed to know who you are?"
Peter paused and thought that He's not wrong. "I am the son of Henry, the grandson of Richard Azberns, the king of the five kingdoms. Your prince!"
The man laughed. "I think he's crazy!" he said to his wife.
Peter took a step forward, said very seriously: "Do you think one fifth of the golden hairs in the city claim to be the king's grandson?"
The man hesitated a little. "First, the King is Henry Azberns, not Richard. Second, how do I

know that you are who you say you are?"
"We're going to Skyglass. If I prove that I was what I said, I will cut off both of your hands. If I wasn't, beat me as much as you like!"
The man saw that the young boy spoke without any doubt, and he was very confident and serious, so he walked away. He could feel Peter's heavy gaze from behind and wished the young man hadn't told the truth. "I knew you're coward!" Peter shouted.
After the fat man left, he continued his way and reached Mother Square. In Mother Square, there was a statue of a woman with a baby in her arms. The stonemasons had made the face of the baby smile at its mother. Peter climbed the four steps to the statue and stood in front of it. The statue had not been properly cleaned for a long time. The spider had put its webs on the mother's eyebrows and settled in the middle. Peter cleaned the mother's face with his hand. He also blew to clean the dirt around the statue. He took the small hands of the baby. He took out a white flower from his pocket and placed it on its fingers. Then he passed the Mother Square. After exploring the

market, an hour later, he arrived behind the gates of Skyglass. "Finally home!" He whispered.
The moon was full tonight, its color turned red as fire. The howling of wolves could be heard in the distance. The ever-bright flames of the palace were bright. They have been lit since the construction of the palace until today. The magic of the celestials still remained in keeping it lit. One of the signs of the coming of the Final day was the extinguishing of the flames of Skyglass; because the darkness of the Middle White extinguished all the earthly flames. Peter, along with his twin brothers, looked at the sky with a device which the inventor called it "the telescope". Peter could see the red moon completely through the lens of the telescope. The deep pits and red seas of the moon could be seen like spots through the telescope. Felios was standing on his right. He was as tall as the telescope and insisted on seeing the moon through the telescope. Selios was standing coolly facing the sky and counting the stars. Peter stepped back, pointed the telescope at Felios so that he too could see the wonders of the night sky

as well. Felios was very pleased and looked into the glass of the lens with great enthusiasm. After breaking away from the telescope, Peter sat next to Selios on his feet so that he was as tall as him. "How many stars did you count, little brother?"
Selios glanced at him, then concentrated on counting the stars. He pointed towards the stars with his little hand. "Fifteen so far."
"Do you want to count together?"
A maid entered without announcing his presence. He quickly said: "The Queen said to inform you for dinner."
Selios was about to say something when Peter turned and said: "I'll be there soon."
Peter drew the curtain in front of the window. Felios protested and frowned at him. Peter ran his hand on his golden hair. "Didn't you hear that? It's time for dinner! We will look at the sky together another time, okay?"
Felios nodded his head in approval. Peter picked up the metal telescope and put it back in its place. He took the twins to the living room. Their parents were in the living room and they were eating. The twins quickly sat on the seats on both

side of their mother. Peter slowly pulled the chair in front of his father from the table. His father's serious look worried him a little. He pretended that nothing had happened and sat down on the chair. "The family is reunited after three years and is having a family dinner." he said. "So where is the grandfather? His absence is felt."

"Your grandfather is unwell." his mother replied. "He is no longer interested in having a dinner together. Lately, he is more thoughtful and want to be alone. His illness has also made him weak and incapacitated."

Peter picked up the fork and said: "That's unfortunate, but what can we do? The farmer tries not to spoil his crops. The shepherd tries to take his sheep to the pasture and bring them back safely, so that none of them get hurt. The builder tries to put stones together to make a building. The guards and knights are trying to protect their lord with their swords, but my grandfather is trying to stay alive!"

"Don't say that!" Enaya protested.

"Mother, don't get me wrong. I mean, we all don't live forever, I'm just saying we have to be

ready for that day."
Henry asked: "And what about the responsibility towards the country? would you steal the princess of another land and bring her to your country?"
The piece of meat that Peter ate got stuck in his throat and caused him to cough. He coughed continuously. He drained his glass. His face became a little red. "What are you talking about, Henry?" Enaya asked, shocked.
"Ask your son." Henry replied.
"What did you do, Peter?" Enaya asked carefully. "Is your father telling the truth?"
Peter looked at the table filled with food. Roasted lamb, sweet summer fruits that were in a dish in the middle of the table, warm toasted breads, cherry juice that was filled in beautiful copper decorated pitchers, and delicious sweets. Everything was arranged on the table in harmony. He was looking at those delicious foods, but his lost his appetite. "How do you know?"
"How do I know!? Because of what you did, the king of Paradise almost declared war on us. You risked the whole kingdom for one girl?!" Henry said.

Enaya saw her husband's angry face and tried to calm him down. "Now that's over and nothing happened. He won't do it again, I promise."
"If your sweet son had brought that innocent girl here, we would have had to bring the five kingdoms into a war with Paradise that we had never seen something like that before in history. The War against the union!" Henry said.
He looked at Peter and continued: "If you wanted her, you could have told me. I would send a letter to Jorel Rking and respectfully propose to her, maybe he would accept that. Now he thinks that Vach is not interested in continuing the unity with Paradise anymore. The unity that the lost son, Reagan Highwill, had made."
Peter put the fork on the table. "First, I didn't want to steal her, so I convinced her to come with me. Second, I wasn't supposed to bring her here. "
"So where did you want to take her?"
"Poorvios." Peter lowered his head.
Henry chuckled then said." Poorvios!? Why Poorvios?"
"I wanted to live."
"Then, what would people say? The Prince of

Vach and the Princess of Paradise run to Poorvios?"
Henry's voice became a little louder. "To live! How poetic! Didn't you think about what will happen to your land in this plan of yours?"
"Does it matter?" Peter said quietly.
"Does it matter? I cannot believe that you are my son! I didn't raise you like this."
"You know what!" Peter said. "The point is that you never raised me. Ever since I can remember I was with my mother and Sir Gram Evert till I got a little older. Then you sent me to Paradise to be away from you, not to learn anything, but you were tired of me and wanted to serve the king with your good duty. And you thought I was the cause of your disgrace!"
"This is not true!" Enaya said.
"Mother, unfortunately it is. I wanted to make a decision for the first time in my life, but unfortunately I failed."
He got up and said to his father: "I heard you became the king, congratulations!"
When he finished, he left the table and went back to his room. He laid down on the bed and

thought about the events of the past few days and moments ago. He said things he shouldn't have said. He felt sorry for himself. He remembered: He was waiting for Imotry Rking by a tree outside the Flower Road. It was very cold that night. The clothes he was wearing did not warm him. The cold acted like a knife in the layers of his clothes and bothered him. He had been standing for several hours. Imotry arrived with her companion with a cloak thrown over their heads. "Are you sure about this?" Imotry asked Peter as soon as she arrived.

"Yes, one hundred percent," Peter answered without hesitation.

Peter ordered the maid to untie the horses from the tree. The girl moved towards the tree. Before reaching the tree, she was hit on the head and fell to the ground with a groan. "What are you going to do? Do you want to kill her?" Imotry said worriedly.

"No, I don't want to kill her. She wasn't part of the plan. We couldn't take her with us."

Peter untied the horses from the tree. He put the unconscious girl on the horse and made the two

horses to move to the east. "We have to go from the pier. No one finds out we are leaving from there. We get on a normal ship and head to Poorvios, so easily! By the way, didn't your father find out that you're leaving the Silverown?"
"No, my father thinks I fell asleep." Imotry answered while she was taking a deep breath.
"Okay, let's go!"
"On foot?!"
"Yeah, walking is good for your feet!" Peter said. "We don't look suspicious like this."
They reached a small hut. Smoke was coming out of the chimney of the hut heater. Peter thought to himself: "The weather is so cold that the people of the house lit a fire." Imotry was tired of walking and felt cold. Together they decided to go inside the hut and spend the night there. It seemed very risky, but the weather was not suitable for him and Imotry, and they couldn’t walk till morning to reach the pier. They reached the door of the hut. Peter knocked on the door while the stress took over him. After a few seconds, a little girl opened the door. She had braided red hair. "Is your father home?" Peter asked.

The little girl was on the verge of tears. "I don't have a father. I live with my mother and brother."
"I'm sorry about your father." Peter said. "can you tell your brother to come?"
The girl was surprised. "He can't talk!"
"Why? Is he mute?"
"No, he's not mute! He is a baby! He can just walk."
Peter bowed and said. "I apologize for being disrespectful. Can you tell your mother to come?"
The girl lowered her head and burst into tears. "My mother can't come!"
Peter got Confused and asked. "Why? Can't she walk? "
The girl answered with a sad face: "Yes, she can't walk. My mother is paralyzed."
"Who is your guardian and looking after you?" Peter wondered.
"My uncle."
Peter became happy. "I'm sure your uncle can walk and talk, can you tell him to come?"
"He's not home."
Peter smiled gently and said: "You know what? Never mind. What's your name, good girl?"

"Marcy"
"Little Marcy, the weather is very cold and it seems that we have no shelter for tonight and we have come from a long way. Can we come inside? Only until sunrise. We will go whenever the sky is half clear. I promise you, Marcy. What are you saying now?"
"How do I know you're not thieves?" Marcy said.
Imotry came forward. "You asked a good question. If we were thieves, do you think a grown up man and woman who can walk…, Of course, I don't mean to offend, I just mean that we can force our way into your beautiful hut and you little one can't stop us, so come up with a reason why we can't do it?"
"I don't know," Marcy replied.
"Because we are not thieves!"
Marcy opened the door completely. "I'm convinced, come in."
"You must talk like this." Imotry said to Peter.
"What did I say?" Peter replied complaining.
They entered the hut. The hut was hot like a big cauldron on the fire. Peter thought that he preferred the outside, now! A woman was sitting

on a rocking chair staring into the fire in front of her. A small child was also sleeping next to her. When she noticed their presence, she motioned to her daughter Marcy. Marcy ran to her mother and whispered in her ear. "My home can be your shelter for one night." her mother said. "According to my daughter, you should go after the sunlight is seen. My brother-in-law will be angry if he sees you here. He's not used to letting strangers in. I'm sure you understand that."
"Yeah, yeah. We understand." they said together
The woman pointed at Marcy again with her eyes. The girl immediately understood. She took them to the dining table and poured soup for them. "Don't worry, we're not hungry." Peter said.
He looked at Imotry. "Are we?"
Imotry paused and said. "Maybe we are!"
"What do you mean "we are"? Didn't you eat something?"
"I was in a hurry and I was stressed! There was no time!"
"What do you mean there was no time?" Did you want to...?"

Marcy jumped in the middle of his words: "No problem. Hot soup is more delicious in the cold weather."
Imotry spent the night eating soup and playing with Marcy. Peter also rested for a while, but he was careful not to fall asleep completely; because he didn't want to wake up in the prison of Paradise. The morning started with a freezing cold; as cold as the night. The sun had not fully risen. They went out without making any noise and waking up the people of the hut. They continued their way to the pier. They reached the pier in full daylight. Peter spoke to one of the ships bound for Poorvios and got a special cabin for themselves. According to the ship's captain, the ship was leaving in an hour. Peter entered the ship's cabin with Imotry. Imotry had been deep in thought since waking up. "What's wrong?" Peter asked. “It's time to go to the ancient land of Poorvios. The ship crosses the middle of the Middle Sea and..."
"We can't do this. That's wrong, Peter! We have to finish it right now."
"What do you mean?" Peter said. "After all this

progress, we have reached the last point, we are succeeding, should we finish it? What does it mean?"
"I just can't, please," Imotry was close to tears.
Peter became angry. He punched a ship's body. "You think it's easy..."
He came to Imotry and looked into her eyes. "It's just difficult for a few days, then things will be normal and we'll forget everything."
"I don't want it to be normal, I just want to go home," Imotry shouted. "Please!"
Lying on his bed, Peter remembered that incident and muttered. "Stupid girl!"
He fell asleep after a few minutes. His ears were twitching, an ant was walking in his hair. A feather touched his face. It woke him up. He opened his eyes, he saw Felios teasing him with his little fingers. He grabbed him and brought him to the bed. He gave him a tickle. Felios was out of breath because of laughing. "What do you want, little one?" Peter laughed.
Felios, who was speechless from laughing so much, couldn't say anything. After laughing, he took a deep breath. "Father and grandfather want

to see you in the kingdom hall."
"Why?"
"I don’t know. Give me more tickle, Peter."
Peter made him laugh again with his hands. After getting ready, he reached the kingdom hall. His grandfather was sitting on the infinity throne. The middle white whiteness shone from the roof window to the twelve throne rings and showed the lands of the kingdom. In the highest ring he saw Roarlion, his fatherland. His father was talking to his grandfather. Peter came forward.
"Did you want to see me?"
"Have you been asleep all this time?" Henry asked.
"Did you bring me here to talk about my bedtime, father and grandfather?"
"No, I want to give you a mission, so listen carefully!" The old king said.
"Are you trying to get me out of the house again, like you always do?" Peter chuckled.
"I want to give you a chance to make up for your mistake, understand?" Henry said. “So listen to your grandfather."
"Alright, I'm at your service." Peter said.

Henry handed a letter to Peter. The seal of two kings was on it, Peter saw it. "This is a letter from me and Henry to John Highwill." The old king said. "You give this to him personally, not to the guard of his castle, not to his companion, not to his wife, not to his sons. You only give it to himself."

"Why would I do that?" Peter asked.

"Because you are the most trustworthy person I know; Of course, you are also my grandson, who's better than you?"

"What's in it?" Peter asked.

Chapter 16
Azberns
The unknown path

"**Y**ou can't do that, he just came! Send someone else. Commander Lord Mid Sir Alest Trini, or Sir Thomas Neel, or I don't know, just someone else."

Enaya couldn't believe what her son had said at the dinner table. "Just don't do it, for me." she insisted. "Peter has just arrived and he's still a child!"

"He won't stay as a child forever." Henry said. "He is not the legendary Zyros in the stories who will remain a child forever. Peter is growing up and has to accept important responsibilities in his life. This is your father's order."

Peter entered into their discussion with the twins.

Enaya could no longer convince Henry; so she had to prepare herself to say goodbye to her son. Wiping her tears, she got up from the table and walked over to Peter. She kissed his forehead. "My handsome boy!"

"It's fine, mother." Peter smiled. "It's a little trip that luckily won't last three years, isn't it father?

"Sooner than what you think. Besides, you're not going to be alone, I will send one of the best guards with you."

His family accompanied him to the harbor of the city and watched him go. His mother was standing on a rock. She watched Peter on the deck of the moving ship for a second time. But this time to another destination and with an experienced knight who protected him like his own son. The twins waved at him from a distance and made silly faces. Sir Durand Ferron, the knight accompanying Peter, had lost his brown hair with age, and a little of it remained on his head. Sir Durand was the oldest knight in the castle who had sworn to protect Henry, but now he was on a journey to Irence to protect his son. His eyes were like two marbles of the yellow sun.

Instead of his shiny armor, he covered his body in a brown velvet robe. He stood solemnly and confidently next to Peter. His hand was always on the hilt of the sword so that he could pull it out without missing a moment as he feels danger. The ship was moving slowly, slower than it could. Some of its rowers were old and rowed with great effort. Some of them were talking instead of rowing. The rest of the rowers, who were ordinary people, were impatiently rowing and the ship was forcefully moving forward. The captain of the ship was distracted by the map and did not yet notice the slow motion of the ship. His parrot was also sitting on his shoulder and was completely silent. Not because no one talks to it; because the captain had cut its tongue with a knife. But the parrot was still loyal to him. With its special silence and the strange looks it gave to the captain, it was somehow talking to him. Peter was staring at the parrot. Its color was mixed from yellow, red and green. A colored silver ring was also attached to its leg, which was exactly like the ring of the captain. It was said that when the captain hit the silver ring with a dagger, the

sound made would reach the parrot and the parrot would quickly reach him wherever it was.
A warm wind was blowing from the east, leaving its warmth on Peter's cheeks. Standing on the deck of the ship, Peter watched the sunset and the middle white set, until the night took the light from his eyes. The ship arrived at the Hope harbor at night and stopped there. The captain of the ship guided his passengers to the guest house near the harbor so that after dinner they would keep moving to their main path, Ventos. When Peter and Sir Durand reached the land of Ventos, they had to take the free road, which was the direct path to Irence. The people inside the ship such as: ship crew, new workers, ship captain and especially passengers got off. The guest house was located at a distance of four hundred yards from the harbor. Inside the guest house, Sir Durand took a table in the corner of the hall for themselves. Both of them were eating. Fried chicken with carrot juice and some salt that was poured on a small plate were in front of them. Peter ate chicken thigh by salting it. The guest house was filled with the noise of the crowd, it

received many travelers at this time of the night, some of whom couldn't even find a chair to sit on. Five people gathered around a round table and played chess. The other two were singing poetry and clinking their glasses on the table as they drank every sip. An old man had placed colorful stones on a table, so that people could choose among them by picking them up, and if they liked them, the old man would receive gold coins. Peter was watching people from the corner of the hall, but no one was paying attention to him or Sir Durand. Sir Durand was an anorexic man who could barely eat a meal in the night-white-day. He didn't care about the chicken meat and he was satisfied with carrot juice, which he drank from time to time. Peter put the bone in his hand on the plate and said to Sir Durand: "I'm going to relieve myself. We'll see each other in the ship."
"Would you like me to come with you?" Sir Durand asked.
"No, it's alright. Return to the ship after finishing your meal."
"Fine, my prince."
Peter entered the ship after he was done. His

cabin which located near the stairs at the entrance, was open. He came in without any special attention. He thought to himself: "How much the room has changed! I must have been illusory, but the window was on the other that side! Why had it changed?" His eyes were warm and he didn't bother to consider the questions. He convinced himself that everything would be fine tomorrow morning, so he didn't care and threw himself on the bed. Sir Durand hadn't yet come. He went to a deep sleep; as if the Final day came, he wouldn't wake up. He felt falling down from the bed while he was asleep. He was hit hard on the side. In his dreams, he didn't feel pain from the punches and kicks, or even the sword that wounded him, but that was real! Pain surrounded his brain. When he opened his eyes, he felt a sharp pain. His head was dizzy. He noticed two large shadows in front of him. He looked up to see who the shadows belonged to. A bald bony man approached him and said: "Were you dreaming of becoming a king?"

Peter felt sick from his bad breath. He didn't have time to process what happened. Maybe he was still

dreaming! Or maybe not, what had happened? If he is awake, who are these men? Why are they behaving like this? Peter was about to say something when two men forcibly took him out of the ship's cabin. Peter was dragged by his clothes to the deck of the ship. When Peter arrived on the ship's deck, seeing the scene in front of him, instead of thinking about who these men were or why they were acting like this, Peter should have prayed for survival! In the wakefulness! A number of people from the ship were kneeling around him, most of them were young and children. Dead men with the axes buried in their stomachs had fallen into the eternal sleep. The red blood had spread a big carpet on the deck of the ship. Men with big and sharp weapons in their hands were playing the song of death with trumpets on the deck of the ship. Peter didn't see any flag in their hands to figure out which house they belong to. They were wearing strange black clothes with iron chains wrapped around them. The chains started from their feet and reached their necks, and a knot was tied around their necks. Despite the chains, they could

still breathe well and walk steadily. Peter reached beside one of the kneeling men. "Where are we?" he asked.
The man with a shadow of fear on his face, was speechless and trembling. He didn't answer, he just kept shaking his head. The young boy who was next to him was injured and was sweating from the pain. He tried to keep his eyes open and then and he kept himself on his knees to stay alive. Another person joined them with a kick. He had fallen next to Peter with the kick he had received. He was trying to pull himself together quickly and kneel down. Peter helped him. He helped him kneel on his right side. He was also scared and panicked; He had never seen wild people like them before. Peter looked for Sir Durand among all the kneeling people and even the dead ones, but he couldn't find him. He asked himself that where has he gone? The Men in chains had pulled out all the people in the ship to the last one. Those who resisted them, answered directly with the axes and swords. Peter heard a voice that said: "Transfer the remaining garbage to our ship. We will return to the Last island."

Peter thought to himself that where is the Last island? He had never heard of it before. He asked the young boy who helped: "Where are they taking us?"
The boy, who was nervous, worried and scared, answered: "Didn't you hear what he said? We are going to go to the Last island."
"Where is the Last Island?"
"The island of exile that was created in the north of Paradise, which is called the Last Island. It was once the island of dreams, but now it has become the worst island in the world. In the true sense, hell is Paradise!
"Our ship was supposed to go to Ventos, how did it get out of Paradise?" Peter wondered.
The young boy answered without hesitation: "The ship was supposed to go to Paradise, but on the way it was robbed by the pirates of the Flag-wearing Brothers and they're taking us to the prison inside the island, the island of dreams!"
Peter though himself: "Oh my God! I boarded the wrong ship." He was sleepy when he boarded the ship, which made him rush. He had not even looked at the sails and the ship itself and had

boarded the first ship he saw in the harbor. There was another terrifying voice that said: "Get up, otherwise I will have to feed your corpses to the hungry sharks of the sea. Anyone who thinks I'm joking can try me!"
The angry man brought his mouth close to Peter's ear. "Sharks prefer golden hairs more, they even kill each other for that!"
they all laughed. The man also laughed ridiculously, or in Peter's opinion, he was laughing forcefully. He again brought his filthy mouth, with its black, worm-eaten teeth, close to Peter and shouted: "Now!"
The young man nudged Peter's arm, warning him to stand up. with an angry look at the man in chains, Peter obeyed without a word and stood up. He boarded another ship with others. It was obvious that the ship belonged to them. Its sails were linked together by the pattern of numerous chains. The edges and sides of the ship were holed or chipped and needed major repairs. It was the worst ship Peter had ever seen. The smell of stench, sickness and dead people was spread throughout the ship; it was like a healing house

full of sick people who spread pollution and disease throughout it with their coughs and foul breaths. When a healthy person enters, in a moment, they take him to the arms of their foul breaths. Peter could barely breathe. He was holding his hand on his nose. Others were staring at him. Of course, they were used to this miserable situation and it didn't matter to them; On the other hand, they were the cause of the bad smell and there was no other expectation from them. They only bothered those who were new to the ship. Peter turned a corner with the young boy. The young boy had told him that this was his first trip to Paradise; Of course, he was facing bad luck, his name was Finn. They reached the Last Island by dawn. The island was built by Regulus Rking's third son, Hyward. After the island operates by the operation of another material, the rocks, like the tree, stood up underground and the island was filled with high and irregular rocks. Initially the island was built to build a city for tourism. Above any rock was the key of happiness, but the island had become prison over time, where the rocks were

imprisoned instead of the key. There was a shelter in the rocks that look like a castle, without a wall! The leader of the group sent his new hunting to the shelter. As Finn told him, the island was like the hell with sharp rocks and there were prisons between the rocks of that.

As they walked between the high rocks whose tip reached the sky, one of the chained men growled to move quickly. The man's growl ended in a moan. One by one, the men chained men fell on the ground.

First, Second, Third, Fourth, Fifth, Sixth, Seventh, Twentieth and finally the last person fell on the ground. Sharp steel Arrows were coming from among the rocks to their chests. Arrows were coming down from the east, west, front and even from the sky. The remaining people on the ship all stood up. Their hunters, who were the chained men guards, they all died. With closed hands, Peter picked up one of the swords and held it forward. Suddenly an arrow hit the sword and the sword slipped from his hand. People armed with slingshots came out. The man with the black nose motioned for the others to lower their

weapons. He also gave his slingshot to one of his men. He took an arrow from behind his back and came to Peter. "You have a loose hand, boy! My arrow was not that powerful and if it was, you would have lost your hand!"
He walked among them and continued: "So you're the new preys. You should be glad that we rescued you. If it wasn't for us, you people wouldn't see the golden color of the sun, the whiteness of the middle white, and the silver moonlight of the night in sleep or wakefulness. We are the first men who ran..."
He stared at one of them then continued: "After twenty damn years!"
He stood in front of Peter again. "I guess you brought a ship with you. So where is your ship? We want to go home together, don't we?"
His men held their bows above their heads and shouted: "Home! Home!"
"Where is your home?" Peter asked.
"We build, we live, we rule." the black-nosed man answered.
"Paradise." Peter said.
Peter picked up the sword again. The loud sound

of trumpets could be heard in the distance. It scared people on both sides a little. As soon as the black-nosed heard the trumpets, he looked at his men and his look spoke of running away. After the black-nosed escaped, the archers ran after him to get them to the ship. Peter and Finn separated from them and went in the other direction together. With all the strength in his legs, Peter was trying to escape from the nightmare that had been created for him. He still thought he was dreaming, but he didn't want to go to the unknown prison that kept the black-nosed for twenty years, even in his nightmare. While running, Finn twisted his leg and fell. Peter stopped when he heard his moaning. He went to help him. "Get up, we have to go."
"My foot hurts! I think it's broken!" Finn moaned again.
"It doesn't break once you fall! Get up, I'll help you go to the beach."
Peter took his hand and lifted him up. He grabbed him by the shoulder and wanted to drag him to the beach. The sound of the trumpets was getting closer. "You don't have to." Finn said.

"Yes, I do!"
When they reached the shore, there was no ship. They were all standing confused and cursed the life. Peter could see their sad faces. Some of them had went to the sea and wanted to swim to Paradise, but they would never succeed. Peter had reached the end and had no hope. He had already believed that he was awake. Full awakening! His nightmares had come true. A large number of flag-wearing brothers stationed on the island came from among the rocks. Instead of standing and grieving, Peter drags Finn along the beach to get away from them. The flag-wearing brothers charged towards the remaining fugitives on the shore who longed to be freed. As the battle intensified, Peter sped up to escape with Finn. He was about four hundred feet away from them. They stopped for a few seconds to have a break. Peter looked behind him. The men who were captured with him on the ship were dying screaming. It was clear that none of them had been trained and they were just waving their weapons in any direction. The flag-wearing brothers took full advantage of their wrong move

and killed them without hesitation. But the men who had just escaped from the prison on the island were wielding swords like knights. The black-nosed thrust his sword into their bodies through the chains attached to their clothes. He defeated his opponent and managed to knock him to the ground, but an ax came towards him from a distance and hit his hand. The sword was released and wounded his hand. "You have a loose hand, man!" Peter said.

Two of the flag-wearing brothers saw Peter and Finn. One with a sword and the other with an ax moved towards them. Peter saw the terror in their eyes. He hurriedly continued his way forward. Peter knew they would catch up to him sooner or later, so he planned to attack them in his mind on how to take them down. One of them, holding a sword, increased his speed. Peter could hear his heavy footsteps coming closer and closer. As soon as he arrived, Peter pushed Finn forward then he dodged. The blow of the sword passed over his head. When Peter turned, he thrust his sword into his back in one motion. The man screamed so loud that it could reach the prison of the island.

The second person reached Peter. Peter pulled the sword out of the man's back. The man screamed again. The second man immediately hit Peter. With Peter's guard, his kick failed to knock Peter down, but it had its impact. Peter was thrown aside after the impact. He dropped the sword on the ground and ran away. At that moment, he was only thinking about his own survival and forgot about Finn. The ax man went to with a confident look. Peter looked back for a moment to see how far the ax man was from him. Suddenly, his leg got stuck on something and he fell down. His smooth face hit the ground and the sand went into his mouth. He raised his head. He spit out the sand that went inside his mouth. A large shadow formed in front of him. He turned and saw the owner of the big shadow. The ax man was standing in front of him and was ready to kill him. He raised the ax with both hands and wanted to land on Peter's head. Peter didn't believe in luck, but he knew that the luckiest people on earth were the Taleskys. They came out of big and difficult predicaments alive in an extraordinary way. He heard something coming

that saved him. Finn aimed Peter's fallen sword at the ax man, then he hit his back with the sword. After the sword hit his back, the ax man moaned quietly that was only heard by Peter. At that moment, Peter considered himself as lucky as the Taleskys. He smiled at the man. The flag-wearing man brought the ax down. It was as if he had lost the ability to hold it. His face changed. His eyes were closed. Peter wanted to stand up and watch him die. The man's eyes were opened when he got up. He hit Peter horizontally with the ax. Peter took himself a little back, but his blow caused a deep wound on his body and he fell. Finn reached the ax man. He thrust the sword completely into his back. The ax man moaned again and he released the ax. Finn pulled the sword out of his back and came in front of him. Peter was lying on the floor with open eyes and looked at the blue sky. He thought to himself: "This is my luck!"

"You'll be fine." Finn said as he walked over to him. "Here, where you fell, the boats are buried close to the sea. I don’t know why, but it doesn't matter. We have to get to the boat that is located

in the sand at a short distance by the sea. We pull the boat out and get away from this damn island. Can you get up? You don't have to pull me this time!"
Peter heard vague sounds. The pain of the wound took over his entire body, which disabled his five senses, and the sense of sight was the last. He blinked a few times at Finn's face which became blurred for him now. It didn't take long for his eyes to close. Something was pulling him in a direction, he could feel it. After a while, his body settled in a calm and stable place. Finn had put him on the boat. The boat was leaving the shore. Finn paddled as fast as he could to get away from the flag-wearing men and the cursed island. All the fugitives were almost killed in the attack. The boat went so far that the island looked like a small spot. With Finn's paddling that spot also disappeared after a while. Peter was lying on the boat and his body was colored with fresh blood. Finn had bandaged his wound with a cloth to keep him alive until they could find a safe place. The boat continued to move until night. Finn and Peter's situation had not changed yet. Finn had

forgotten the pain in his leg and continued paddling towards the path of hope. He believed that this path leads to happiness. There was darkness in front of Finn's eyes. Even the moonlight couldn’t illuminate the front of the boat. Finn was also tired and stopped paddling. He came to Peter. He put his ear to his chest, it was still beating. He rested a little. When he woke up, he opened his eyes. When he looked up, he noticed something. Something hit the boat and the boat shook. Finn raised his head. He saw the flames of the torch on a ship. The hull of a ship had hit the boat and shook it a bit. Finn was both happy and worried. A rope fell from the ship into the boat. The ship's sails were intact; so it didn’t belong to flag-wearing brothers. Finn hesitated a bit and didn't know what to do. He struggled a little with himself. Finally, he agreed to give a positive response to the rope that came inside the boat. He tied Peter with the rope so that he would be pulled up first. After Peter was gone, the rope fell down again. Finn grabbed the rope with stress and pulled himself up. When he was about to come on the ship's deck, a black hair man with

white streaks in his hair grabbed his hand and pulled him up. "Thank you." Finn said.
Finn quickly came to Peter. He saw everyone on the ship gathered around Peter. He bent down to reassess his position. The crew made way for a young boy with the sword in his hand. A white leaf was engraved on the hilt of his sword. The young boy saw Peter and became surprised. "Do you know him?" Sykin asked.
"I saw him when we went to the capital with Ray and William for the King's competition," Taimen Highwill replied. "He is Prince Peter Azberns."
Finn looked at Taimen's face. He couldn't believe the words that came out of his mouth. "Why is he injured? Why is he here?" Taimen asked Finn.

Chapter 17
Highwill
Torence

The moving gate of the city of Torence went down into the ground. On a clear morning with warm summer weather and a gentle wind which was blowing through her black hair, Wyveen Highwill stood near the Gate of Torence City and watched the gate open at dawn. Next to her was her closest friend, Nerys, the daughter of Mike Garden, one of the guards who had gone to Whiteel with her father, and the Moon Knight, Sir Dyson Dean. The city of Torence was only a few miles away from Irence. A city with seven streets in which there was a big shield the center of it. The green leaf of the House of Highwill was engraved on the shield. The shield was made to commemorate the first Highwill, the star shield Myllen, but it was much larger than its actual size.

The gate of Torence went down in the morning and came up again at the middle white dawn. The gate moved slowly. The city appeared before them. The big shield could be seen from the entrance of the gate. Wyveen entered the city with Nerys and the Moon Knight. Many carts and wagons entered the city with them. Inside the carts there were all kinds of vegetables and various summer fruits were arranged on them with all elegance. Wyveen knew they came from the east side of Ventos, a green place with many orchards that had the best fruits of Ventos. They made their way to Shield Street, which was the street in front of them, to visit the star shield Myllen memorial. While walking, Wyveen complained to Nerys about the hot weather and wanted to go under the shade of the shield as soon as possible; so they took their steps bigger and faster to reach the shield. Wyveen was the first to arrive under the shadow of the large shield, and the others followed. A large shield figure stood firmly on top of a carved stone. The broad shadow of the shield fell on Wyveen and the other people beside her, most of whom were ordinary people of the city.

The carriage men had made a station next to the shield, and they entertained the passengers by taking a few silver coins. Wyveen said to the Moon Knight to talk to one of the carriage man about going the rest of the way. The carriage man, who understood the knight's point, stopped the carriage in front of them. He got down from the carriage and politely opened the door for them. The carriage man was so fat that he could barely walk. His face was as ripe as a watermelon and he was wearing a hat with feathers. The hair around his face, except for his black moustache, was all one brown. "Come in, my lady." he said. "It is at your service."

Inside the carriage, the window was broken and the rectangular frame was empty. They were looking out of the open window. Sir Dyson told the fat man, apparently named Ted, of their destination, which was a shop on Secret Street. Ted knew all the ways of the city. This was his job since he was a child. The knight was sitting next to him and was talking to him. They were talking about the problems of the city, that the thefts have decreased recently, or the number of

beggars in the city had increased, and beggars were seen in every alley, street, or intersection. Every day, the ravens bring news from across the Vach, the Skull Islands, and Poorvios to the world's raven shop. The world's raven shop belonged to Loukai the Thousand Eyes, the one from whom people heard the latest news. It is said that he sits on the chair he made next to his shop and some people gather around him to tell the news in public. The last news he had received from Poorvios was that the Rordeniss of southern Poorvios is making conquests and have appointed their greatest hero, Vanter, as their commander. Rordeniss is trying to conquer all of Poorvios for himself, but in the Moon Knight's opinion, with conquering two cities, you can't become the conqueror. The main conqueror was Olyns, who conquered all of Poorvios without bloodshed. These new ones do not even compare with him. Sir Dyson wanted to sit next to Ted all night long and have a long conversation. Wyveen showed Nerys the entrance of the Secret Street with her hand. The carriage stopped in front of a shop to let off its passengers. The moon knight opened

the door of carriage for the girls. Wyveen got off with Nerys. The knight gave Ted four silver coins. Ted thanked them by removing his hat. "If you want me to take you somewhere else, I'll wait here for you."
"No, thank you very much." Wyveen said.
The carriage man put his hat on and left. The door of the shop was open and they went inside.
"Grandfather!" Wyveen said happily.
Carl Hartwood was the oldest shopkeeper in Torence. Only a white hair was left on his head, which was clearly visible. He held Wyveen in his warm arms. "My dear granddaughter, you are beautiful and lovely as always!"
Wyveen looked carefully at her grandfather's face. His wrinkles were thicker. His hands were full of visible veins. But unlike all the old men who want to lift a glass of water and bring it to their mouth, before bringing the glass to their mouth, they empty half of it with the tremor in their hand, but Carl Hartwood in his old age still acted strongly and firmly; Without any stress and trembling in his whole body. Carl had once been the proud Lord of Greenwoods, and after his abdication he

left it to his eldest son and set up a shop for himself in Torence of antiques and tools being invented. The rest of his life was spent in the same shop. "What's new, my old man?" Wyveen asked.
He took out a small iron box from the large bronze chest and placed it on the table in front of Wyveen. The iron box was closed with a metal lock, he opened it with the key he took out of his pocket. It was full of small and large beads and small steel numbers inside it. Among them, he took a circular device that looked like a compass. Carl Hartwood said: "Did you see the three o'clock symbol of the sun, the middle white, and the moon on the body of the Skyglass Kingdom Tower?"
"I've never been to Star City before, grandpa." Wyveen said. "That is, my father doesn't allow it, but my brothers went once for the King's naming anniversary competition."
"Yeah...yeah...you're right. I have completely forgotten. I lost my memory. I quickly forget everything! Even the most beautiful and sweetest memories with Lady Greenwoods. What a time it was! We lived together like fairy tale princes.

Like..."
Wyveen gently shook her shoulder and said gently and kindly: "Grandpa, I know. You were talking about the capital clock."
"Yes...yes...capital clock!" Carl said as he came out of his youthful dream of living with the Lady of the Greenwoods. "The only watch that exists in the world. The clock in the capital is turning around. When the day comes, the circular shape of the sun shifts in the middle and its golden light gradually brightens with the light of day. In the middle white, the white star takes the place of the sun in the middle and creates a dazzling white light; So that the shapes of the sun and the moon are placed on both sides without light. At night, the shape of the half-full moon acts like a torch and makes the Kingdom Tower visible from afar. That clock is beautiful, but it is not perfect, and the only advantage it has is that it marks the Final day."
"How does it determine the final day?" Wyveen asked.
"When the middle white star form is over-sized in the middle, the final day has come. But without a

clock, when the middle white darkness lasts as long as a night-white-day, the final day will be known to have come; Because one of the signs of the final day is the coming of long darkness before the middle white. So if a long period of darkness comes, the clock shows us that the middle white star remains fixed in its place and the moon and sun shapes disappear. On that day, all people's eyes will be fixed on the clock!"

"True, but doesn't that explain why the capital clock isn't perfect?" Wyveen said.

Carl showed the device in his hand to Wyveen and explained: "I told you before, that clock is beautiful, but it is not perfect; because we ourselves can recognize from the sky whether it is day, middle white or night; so it is a useless thing that was made by the celestials for its beauty. But what does the real clock say?"

He pointed at the circular device and explained more: "Look, I was able to implement the real time measured by Master Walden on this small device by reading the time articles. When we can understand time well, we can use each moment of it; especially on the final day. Look how fast this

little hand spins! In this circle, that hand is called the second hand, which is 63 seconds in each minute. This hand, which is relatively bigger than the other one, rotates every hour for 63 minutes. And according to this, in a night-white-day, we have 27 hours of a day, which are 12 hours of day, 12 hours of night and 3 hours of middle white along with 4 minutes of the darkness of the middle white. The final day occurs in the seven night-white-day; That is, in 189 hours. Imagine knowing how sweet time is! We can plan for our every moment on the final day."

Nerys, who was amused, said: "How interesting! How talented you are, Lord Greenwoods."

The old man became angry. "I am not the Lord anymore!"

The moon knight, who was bored, looked at his helmet with reluctance and thought to himself: "None of these are worth buying; it is not even worth looking at." His saw one of the old swords that had been cracked. His color was ice white. The length of the sword was twice as long as himself. When he touched it, he felt the coldness that still remained inside the sword. He thought it

was interesting. Whatever it was, it was better than the garbage helmets. Wyveen took the clock in her hand, and took a brief look. "I wish that the final day will give me the chance to live a long life with precious moments, Grandfather."
"I want to give you this so that you can plan the seconds of your life."
Wyveen's mouth was wide open. "I can't accept this. This is for you; you only have one!"
Carl punched Wyveen's open hand and said: "An old man like me doesn't care about the remaining seconds of his life, every day can be the final day for me. Take it, it's yours now!"
"Thank you, Grandfather."
Carl took out his pocket a bracelet with a sun attached to it. He handed the necklace to Nerys. "This is for you, young lady. When you hold it under the sun, it shines like the sun."
"Thank you very much, Lord Carl...no... Not...lord...old man...no.. I mean, grandfather," Nerys said excitedly." Thank you, grandfather."
Carl glanced at Sir Dyson. "Would you like something too, knight?"
Sir Dyson, who was absorbed in watching the

sword, did not hear Carl's voice. Carl came to him. "It is called the sword of winter. In order to protect themselves in the winter, first men used this type of sword which is made with ice and of course, with a little magic. This sword was broken into pieces by hitting the Infinity Sword, and my ancestors joined its pieces together."
"But, Why?" Sir Dyson asked.
"Because it is our heritage! Unfortunately, I can't give you this, but I will give you one of my helmets."
"No need, I don't want it."
Carl picked up one of his helmets. "No one leaves my shop empty-handed, especially the companions of my dear grandson; so take it before I punch it on your head, now!"
Sir Dyson awkwardly took the helmet. "Thank you." he said softly.
After leaving Carl Greenwood's shop, Wyveen wanted to visit the fabric market. The fabric market was located on the Sun Street; That is, on the street next to them. In order to reach Sun Street sooner, they went through the narrow alley that was connected to Sun Street. It was quiet

inside the alley. The buildings were built with short walls and white cloths were thrown over them that looked like they had just been washed; because the water dripped onto the ground and cooled the hot ground a little. They reached the end of the alley. After a second that Wyveen looked at her watch, they entered the street of the sun. There was a loud scream! Wyveen was worried and looked up from the watch. The people on the street, who were in their usual vibrancy, fell into a terrifying silence when they heard the scream. They all stopped. The sound of screaming could be heard with a painful and louder sound. Wyveen's gaze focused on the horsemen coming from a distance with their claws and dirt. As the riders approached, Wyveen could see them clearly. The horses were equipped with silver colored armor and the most amazing thing about them was that Drops of blood were coming out of their eyes. The riders had dirt faces that were covered with cobwebs and covered their face completely, but their eyes could be seen through the cobwebs half open. From the appearance of their swords, it was clear that they

were old and rusted and turned a dark copper color. Riders galloped forward with their horses. Anyone who stood in front of them, they beat him with their dull swords. With his helmet in hand, the Moon Knight knew it was the time to use it. He put the helmet on his head and drew his sword out of its scabbard. He insisted that they leave as soon as possible. The three of them ran into the narrow alley they just came from. Inside the alley, they ran together quickly to reach the previous street, which was the Secret Street. One of the riders entered the alley. The knight pushed the girls forward and went to the rider himself. He was running forward with a sword that he held tightly with both hands. The rider came further so the distance between him and the knight reached one foot. The knight knocked him down with a kick to the horse's leg. The rider rolled on the ground. His horse neighed loudly but no blood came out of his injured leg. The knight plunged the sword into the stomach of the fallen attacker. He was shocked. He did not believe the look that the rider gave him. Despite the sword that was inserted into his stomach, he

did not make any sound; it was as if he had not felt any pain. The rider got up. The knight plunged the sword completely. Sir Dyson kept looking his half-opened eyes; He was like a person who had just woken up. The rider punched Dyson's face. When the knight was hit, he was thrown to the side along with the sword that he was holding tightly in his hand. The knight stumbled and became confused. He responded to the subsequent blows of attacker with imbalance, which eventually fell to the ground. The fallen horse was neighing, but not from pain; it was because of anger. The rider stood above him with a rusty sword to kill him like the others. Wyveen and Nerys pulled a white cloth from the wall and threw it on the rider's head. The rider's half-open vision was obstructed and he was trying to remove the white cloth. Sir Dyson hurried. After getting up, he delivered the final blow with all his strength. The sword of the knight cut off his head. Now he was sure that the rider felt the real pain. The headless body fell to its knees. Sir Dyson kicked him in the chest and knocked him to the ground. He came to the

horse. He hit the horse's head with his sword to calm him down. The sword entered the brain. Contrary to Sir Dyson's expectation, no blood came out of the horse's head, except dust. The horse calmed down like its rider. The girls, who were scared, stood behind the Moon Knight and debated the matter. "Who else are they?" Wyveen asked.

"I never saw anything like it in my life." Sir Dyson replied. "We have to go quickly."

They left the alley. They came to Secret Street again. They wanted to go back to Carl's shop, which was closed. They had to go forward to get out of the city of Torence, but when they took the seventeenth step, the riders blocked the street from all sides. They made a circle around them with their horses and were spinning. A rider spoke in a special language that Wyveen and her companions did not understand. Sir Dyson stood guard in front of them with his sword, and the girls took refuge behind him in terror. The horses stopped moving. One of the riders got off. He pulled out the spear attached to his horse. "In the name of John Highwill, Lord of Irence, Warden

of the South and Star shield of Ventos..." said Sir Dyson.
A man came forward and stood. They repeated the word among themselves: "Highwill..... Highwill..... Highwill"
One of the riders removed the cobwebs from his face and spoke their language: "Do you know the High..wills?"
"Yes...yes...John Highwill, Lord of Irence, and..." Sir Dyson replied.
He pointed to Wyveen: "She is his daughter. If you hurt her, he will destroy all of you, down to the last one."
They all burst out laughing. The same rider said: "He can't! Drop your weapon. Are you coming with us?"
"Where?"
"To the mountain"
"Why?" Wyveen asked.
"None of you talk. You just listen. Most importantly, you act."
The horses trotted on the hillside. They moved from the slope without losing their balance and pulled themselves up. Wyveen, who was sitting

behind one of the riders, was in tears and was afraid that her horse would slip and fall and they would all be thrown down the mountain. But it was like the horse's legs were sticking to the stone and it was climbing up like a spider with long jumps. If it made webs, Wyveen would be sure that he was dreaming, even if it was a dream, how would she get out of it? She opened and closed her eyes. No, it was not a dream. It was real. The horses reached the highest point of the mountain. They went inside through an opening of a cave. The horses' heads were moving up and down and making noise. The riders dismounted, along with Sir Dyson, Nerys, and Wyveen. They accompanied them into the cave. About twenty people with sullen faces were walking around them like guards. Sharp stones hung down from the ceiling of the cave, on which bats rested with red eyes staring at the new guests. When they arrived, a man similar to them, but thinner and taller, was sitting on a chair made from the body of the cave. He was completely covered in darkness and a hole of light shining into the cave showed his eyes. The rider spoke to him in their

own language. Among their words, the last word was Highwill, and the rider pointed to Wyveen and repeated the word. Wyveen was led forward near the seated man. Wyveen could see his pale eyes with red veins and cobwebs covering his withered face. "Are you Highwill?" the seated man asked.

With tears drying on her cheeks, Wyveen could barely speak. "Yes." she answered slowly.

"I know the first Highwill. He was called the hero of the star shield. What was his name? Huh! Myllen! Myllen the star shield! Yes, I think it goes back to the previous three periods. It's been a long time since then. This is our third dream into the future in prime time, if I recall correctly. It was all the fault of that damn heir of the sword. With those damn purple eyes. Yes, it was his fault."

The rest of his men shouted: "Yes, it was his fault! Damn him!"

"Who are you?" Wyveen asked.

The man sitting on the chair put his head forward. "They call us double-edged. Double-edged people who sleep on the two edges of time, past and future, and wake up in the present. Do

you know what it means?"
"No, I don't know." Wyveen said quietly.
"The first Heir of the Infinity Sword, had made a mistake that had caused a bad impact in the future; so he gave us a mission to find someone in the future."
"Find whom?" Sir Dyson asked.
"Heir of the Infinity Sword. We searched all the lands of the Vach, but we never found him. We sleep for seven thousand years and wake up for seven years. When we woke up three times in the future, the next time we slept for seven thousand years, we were no longer in the future; rather, we were going back to the past. We have gone three times to the future and three times to the past, which is one period. The first period, when we woke up three times in the future, we did not find the Heir of the Sword. When we went back to the time of the first heir, that damn man promised us freedom; provided that if we kill the Highwills in all past and future time periods. But the second time we went back in time, there was no freedom. He had promised us a lie. For the third time which is now, we decided to reign whenever we

wake up, whether in the future or in the past. In the first period, we listened to the words of the purple-eyed hero for the mission, in the second period, to the words of that damned one, and in the third period, we are going to bring terror to the whole world.

He got up from the chair. His men shouted: "Ventar.....Ventar.....Ventar..."

Ventar walked into the daylight. He took a deep breath. The chair he was sitting on collapsed along with the body of the cave, and many double-edged men like him came out. Ventar shouted: "It's time to bring the final day!”

Chapter 18
Ritanion
Aramis

Irvyn took a torch in his hand towards the closed room. He opened the room with the other hand and went into the room with the Adgar. In the middle of the room, they saw a rectangular boulder carved on the surface. "This is the room of the sword of alliance, Troylo Ritanion, the discoverer of the Vach lands." Irvyn said while he pointed the torch towards the writings. "The one who brought the new men to the land of Hallstreet. He was the first to cross the Spirit islands after a few years of traveling around. When he came to this land, he put 117 stones in the north, south, east and west sides. At the specified location, the last stones were located on the four sides of the wall and built the first castle in the name of Ritanions. Troylo the discoverer is

called the second most influential person in the world; because there was someone who make the way of Poorvios to the Vach."
They came out of the first room. Adgar did not know about the past. He did not know why Irvyn had brought him to the last hall, where the rooms of the great Ritanion were there. They passed Troylo the discoverer's Room and entered the next one. Irvyn explained: "This is the sword of justice, Nepp Ritanion. The second legend of the house of Ritanion. He found out by reading Troylo the discoverer's latest will, that 117 feet under the castle he had built, there was a great treasure. Our people think he destroyed the castle because he wanted to build underground, but I tell you that it wasn't for it. His goal was bigger than that. With the demolition of the castle, he discovered the black gold, which with that gold, they could make the great steel swords. He made the world's largest sword in the middle of the castle we are now underneath."
Irvyn took the torch out of the room and they went to the third room. The room was empty and nothing could be seen. "What do you see?" Irvyn

asked.
"Nothing." Adgar quickly replied without hesitation.
"This room belongs to the third sword, the Death Sword, Daitrios Hall Ritanion. The smartest man of his time. With his policy, he became the second conqueror of Vach. Daitrios conquered the lands beyond the Red Sea, uniting with Olyns the Conqueror, for the prophesy that had been said. The prophecy said: Whoever conquers all the lands of the Vach, can get the Infinity Sword. This person was mentioned in the prophecy that he is a vassal. Olyns the Conqueror and Daitrios were both born as vassals in Ventos. Together, they conquered all the lands of the Vach, but the Infinity Sword passed on to its original heir, Olyns the Conqueror. Daitrios always showed his sensitivities to this issue. So he would find ways to use the sword."
Irvyn turned off the torch. Now the empty room became emptier than ever and sank into the darkness. Irvyn relit the torch. Adgar wondered. How was the empty room filled in a moment? Adgar saw the third large stone in the middle of

the room. The room was full of old books and letters. "Eyes see what they need to see." Irvyn said. "This is the famous quote of Daitrios Hall Ritanion.
Adgar could not believe how the room could be filled again by turning the torch on. But well, with what Irvyn had told him, Daitrios was really the smartest person in the house of Ritanion. Irvyn took him to the fourth room. The fourth room was also empty. "Is it like the same room of Daitrios with .....?" Adgar asked.
"No it's not. The three rooms you've seen, they were all real characters who have all remained in history, but this is not the case with this one. This room is for the exceptional son of Daitrios Ritanion, Star Ness."
"Except for the Olyns the conqueror, no one had an exceptional son; Because Olyns the conqueror was the only one who could use the infinity sword. So how did he use infinity sword? "
"Then why do you think he is called the smartest man of his time?" said Irvyn. "It's true that he didn't have the Infinity Sword and couldn't use it, but you don't have to have the Infinity Sword to

use it. He knew exactly how. All of the exceptional sons of Olyns the Conqueror had one characteristic, but Star Ness was more different than all of them. In the battle of time, he was the one who led the exceptional sons of Olyns the Conqueror to the sky. He took Valerios the dragon rider to Middle Time to defeat Valenlaint, the Conqueror of Time, by bringing the winter. And took Ryson Ness to the Dark Time to defeat Valenlaint II in the Second Time by controlling the minds of others, and took his other three sons to the Golden Time to save Olyns the Conqueror. After the battle of time, he disappeared forever. We Ritanions will never forgot him."

When they reached room five, Irvyn turned off the torch. The room was not yet plunged into darkness; because there were bright torches inside the room. "This room is mine." Irvyn said. “I want to be with the real Ritanions when I die!"

"Whatever you wish, my lord." Adgar said. "But when the final day comes, no room can keep anyone safe, not even the dead!"

"Have you ever heard of Graylyn?" Irvyn asked.

"Not until now."

"It is a type of grass that is made by combining some rare mountain plants and some types of flowers in special weather and in suitable conditions. A person who eats Graylyn looks dead; even he doesn't breathe. Graylyn keeps the person's life stable and alive inside; so that others think the person is dead. From our point of view, he is dead, but from his own point of view, he is alive and well. Aramis used Graylyn to fake his own death."

"Aramis is alive! The people of the Steam city prayed for his health. But why should he want to fake his own death?

"Because he understood something about the real truth. The truth of survival!"

Adgar was confused. "What is the truth of survival?"

"After we reached the castle, I received a letter from him saying that he is alive and is now in the capital. He wants to see me and talk about surviving in the final day, which if true, we can save everyone. The final day is near."

"If it's true, what are you going to do?" Adgar asked.

"I want to go to the capital." Irvyn answered firmly. "This is more important than anything else. First and last we have to face it. But we have to prepare ourselves how to face it."
"I'm coming with you."
"No, you should be here." Irvyn said. "I told you about the truth about our family's past, but I haven't told the truth about yourself yet."
Adgar was curious. "What truth?"
"Your father told me some truths about you when he died. When I come back from the capital, I will tell you everything about you. While I'm gone, you must hold the north. My father believed that Wayne is the sword of justice, but I believe that you are the sword of justice!"
Irvyn was staring at the window of his cabin, which was rectangular in shape. The sea water hitting the glass made it a little vague. The sunlight made the sea of the kingdom clear; it was like a king's golden crown placed on the surface of the sea. Irvyn looked at the sky through the frosted glass. The sky was brilliant blue as far as Irvyn's eye could see. A group of migratory birds were flying in the sky from north to south. They

had made a pattern similar to the number eight and were placed in a certain order. Irvyn thought to himself: If it wasn't for the glass, I could hear them. But he heard another voice saying: "Sir, we arrived the capital. You can go now."
Irvyn looked behind. A man of the ship's crew had poked his head in through the open door. He wore an ugly hat on his head. His face was full of black lines; it had probably been a year since he had gone to the bathroom. His long hair hung over his ears from under his hat. Light colored hair had just grown around his face. Irvyn got up from the side of the cabin window and came towards him. He took out some gold coins from his pocket. "This is for you. Don't tell the captain about this; because if you tell him, he will take it from you and deduct a few more coins from your salary."
"Thank you sir. I promise you I won't tell the captain anything."
Irvyn patted his shoulder. "Okay."
He came up on the ship's deck. The traffic was increased by anchoring the ship on the shore. He looked towards the beautiful Star City. He saw

the majesty of Skyglass from far away. The blue glasses that soared to the sky were a delightful for each eager person. He whispered: "A palace made entirely of blue glass. If Sword's Nepp was made of glass, what would it really look like?"
He came down from the staircase of the ship's body on the beach and headed to the city. Shortly after the hiking, but not too much, he reached the gate by the sea. As far as he had heard, the gate by the sea was the best gate for people's traveling, which was always open from morning to night. The guards were next to the gate. Without any questions, he entered the city. In a letter written by Aramis, he mentioned that he should come to a guest house on the Old men Street, where most of the poor people lived. With the inquiry of the people of the city, he found the Old men Street with the guest house at the bottom. Irvyn entered the guest house cautiously. He was wearing a log robe, and when he entered, he took out its hat. The guest housed many travelers from all areas in the summer, most of which were mainly from Hallstreet. In every corner he saw people from different Houses. Looking at their family badge

on their clothes, Irvyn could understand where they belonged, but he didn't care about all of them. He only saw those who were on his way. He searched the whole guest house to find an empty chair, but all the chairs were filled. His eyes fell on a table with two people sitting next to each other. He came to them. The two people were eating in silence in front of each other. Irvyn sat on the third chair. "How many coins do you want to leave here?"

The two people, looked suspiciously at Irvyn. "How much do you want to get out of here now, idiot?" one of them replied.

Irvyn dropped twenty gold coins on the table. The man on Irvyn's left side rolled his eyes and reached out to pick up the gold coins when the man in front of him slammed the knife on the table. "Don't you dare touch them?"

He left the knife on the table and collected all the coins with his two hands. "I'm sorry to call you an idiot." he said to Irvyn. "We're leaving now."

Both of them disappeared like the wind. "That's it!" Irvyn said.

The host brought him a bowl of barley soup.

With each spoon that Irvyn brought to his tongue, he blew it to cool down the heat a little. The first spoon he had eaten in a hurry, his entire tongue was burned by the heat of the soup, and the effect increased with the next spoon. He tried to be a little more careful with his next spoon. The host joined him a few moments later with a cold drink. Irvyn asked him to sit. The host who refused his insistence at first; finally, he was convinced to sit on the chair. "I heard this guest house is one of the best in Star City, is that true?" Irvyn asked.

The host answered: "Yes, sir, this is the best."

"Okay, I just wanted to make sure."

Irvyn put the spoon into the bowl of soup and drank the glass till the last drop to heal the burn left on his tongue, but the drink left its effect after a short time. Desperately, he placed the glass next to the bowl of soup. "Would you like me to bring you anything else?" the host said.

"No." Irvyn replied.

He got up to leave the table, but Irvyn stopped him. "Where are you going?" I'm not done yet!"

The man sat down again. He was very eager to

find out what Irvyn wanted from him. Irvyn took out a white ring from his finger. The man looked at him carefully. He took the white stone out of its silver colored stick and slammed it hard on the table. The white stone was split into many pieces from which he took out a black seed and gave it to the host. "We're going dark, but alive!" the host said and took it.
"Tell me where he is?" Irvyn asked.
"Okay, come with me."
He led Irvyn out from the back door of the guest house to a wooden gate at the end of the alley. That side of the alley was closed with a big wall. He took the black cloth that was placed on the wall and hung it over the alley to cover it completely so that no one could not see into the alley from the outside. He came to the end of the alley next to the gate. The host threw the black seed he had taken from Irvyn through the hole in the door. A few moments later, a voice came from inside the hole. He grabbed the gate and pulled it to the right side of the slide. The gate shook and shifted. "This is the hall of the living dead." the host said. "Come in."

As Irvyn walked into the hall, the host closed the door behind him. With the door closed, he disappeared in the blackness of the hall; like he was blind. He whispered something. His voice echoed in the hall. He got nervous. He took the sword halfway out of its scabbard as the torches lit up one after the other. When it became clear, he saw the stairs located an inch in front of his feet. He thought to himself: It's good that I didn't go further. He counted the stairs. The stairs were not too many to tire him. When he reached the last step, the torches on both sides of the hall were fully lit. The hall was like a large and wide plain filled with rectangular stone slabs. The boulders were placed neatly next to each other. There were so many that Irvyn lost their count. Seeing them, he was confused; it was as if he was stuck among them. As he walked among them and saw them closely, some of them had a personal name engraved on them. He stood next to one of them. He read the name: "Edson, born in 701, after the Golden Rule"

A piece of paper was stuck next to it, on which it was written: Purchased. Irvyn thought to himself:

what is this for? Why should someone buy a boulder? The subject was interesting to him and he wanted to understand what was going on as quickly as possible. He moved his index finger over the words. The stone was cold. Irvyn felt the main cold here. He placed his palm completely on the stone, he could feel its coldness to the marrow of his bones. "People say that cold is the main enemy, but they don't know why? Now I will tell you why. The cold in winter does not show itself at once with all its strength. When winter comes, it doesn't take away all its cold at the first moment; but it starts little by little. The first days of winter are warm and mild like the last days of summer. Until the seventh and eighth days, a cold wind starts blowing from the north and reaches its peak in the following months, so as not to cause people to panic and worry. The cold starts with a slow wind, rises to its limit and decreases in the last days of winter and gradually gives its place to the heat of summer. People protect themselves from the cold by wearing warm clothes and stay by the fire on very cold days. We also know that fire is the opposite of ice. But let me tell you this,

when the final day and the frost begins, it will place all its cold in the big ice and it will suddenly fall on the people like ice rain. Humans, who cannot bear the sudden cold, die in an instant when the ice hits them; it means embracing all the real cold! Their bodies can't take it anymore. The skins open slowly. Red blood flows out. Bones break like a nut with a hammer and finally..."

"What an interpretation of frost and the final day!" Irvyn said. "It was really great. It's like you broke the line between words and reality with this interpretation!"

Aramis had short, dark brown hair. He was also wearing a simple red velvet robe. His face was like a rabbit. Especially his teeth, which were well understood when talking. If he laughed, Irvyn would mistake him as a rabbit. "I guess you came here for answers." Aramis said.

"Yes, you were dead in the Steam City, at least here you are alive!" Irvyn said. I mean alive, not the way you used to be."

Aramis smiled and explained: "It's been a few years since I worked on a unique Graylyn. After years of researching, examining and identifying

different plants around the world, I finally managed to make it. Do you know who was the first person to use Graylyn?"
Irvyn said nothing. Aramis continued: "Myself! If it didn't work, I would be dead now! So I tried it on myself for the first time. After fixing my death, you know what will bring me back? The light! It was the light that woke me up. It was a beautiful light that, when it shone on my tired eyelids, it forced them to move again, so that the eye could see the beauty of the world again. At that moment, I thought I was born again!"
Both of them stepped forward together. "What are all these boulders for?" Irvyn asked.
"It's for the people."
"It's for the people!" Irvyn continued. "For what?"
"In the New Year, all these stone beds..."
"Stone bed??" Irvyn interrupted.
"Yeah, stone bed. In the New Year, all these will belong to those who pay for them, so that they will wake up on the final day.
Irvyn was a little confused. "Why would people want to buy a stone bed to wake up in the final day?"

"Curiosity to see the end of the world!"
"How do you know they will still be alive on these beds until the final day?"
"I don't know." Aramis said very seriously. "I give them all the conditions before selling. Some of them accept and some of them don't."
"And how are they going to wake up?"
"With light"
"As far as I know there's no sunlight on the final day, it's just the middle white." Irvyn said.
"That's right, there is no sunlight. At night, the light of the moon is not strong enough to keep the whole world bright like the sun, and what do we use for the night? Fire! They say that the sun is made from the flames of fire, and apparently we have our own fire on earth. When you hold a torch in front of a person's face, he will wake up. Therefore, this place will be plunged into absolute darkness until the final day. When the darkness of the middle white is over, the rest will wake up to see the end of the world."
Irvyn already had his answers, but he didn't come here for these things. "Well, I didn't come here for that. I came for something more important! It

is not for waking up in the final day; rather, it is to comfort the final day. Confronting is more important than facing."
They arrived near a platform. People had gathered a few steps away. Irvyn could see their faces clearly. Most of them looked middle-aged and old. Seeing the end of the world made them very eager to come here. "How are you going to comfort when you don't face with?" Aramis said.
"I'm not talking about myself, I'm talking about every single living human being who will breathe on the final day." Irvyn said firmly.
"Why does everyone think that the final day and frost is going to destroy everything? On the final day, the biggest event in the world is going to happen; it means the coming of the fourth ice age and the rebirth of the world!" Aramis said.
"Which first, it starts with the destruction of the world, so the biggest event in the world is the final day and the frost."
Aramis disagreed with Irvyn. "When you look at this issue from another side, you realize that everything seems very logical. Maybe destruction is not for us! Maybe destruction is not for us!"

"So what do we do to avoid being destroyed?" Irvyn asked.
"When it rains or snows, we can't stop it. No one can do this; Even if he has the infinity sword. What do we do instead of stopping the rain and snow? We make a shelter and go under its roof to avoid getting wet or cold. But if it rains ice, if you go underground, the ice blade will reach a thousand feet underground. If you go under the sea, the ice blade will follow you in its depths. If you go to the sky, you will be exposed to it. Even if you are inside a castle, a house, a fortress, or a shelter, you will still be destroyed by the impact of large ice crystals. There is no weapon for that worker. For example: Swordwin and Stormwin steel, which is known as the best steel of the Vach, has no effect on ice and cannot save us. So nothing prevents the ice from raining, but I came to something interesting."
"What?" Irvyn excitedly asked.
"If you look carefully, all the houses, palaces, big historical castles, walls and etc., all of these, whether in Vach or elsewhere in the world, were made by humans on Earth, of course, except for

one."
"Skyglass was made by celestials!" said Irvyn. "Do you think Skyglass can save us?"
"Skyglass is the only glass that turns white in the middle white." Aramis replied. "I'm not sure, but Olyns the Conqueror didn't make the Skyglass for the peace of Sky and earth. His purpose was greater than these things. If Skyglass can save us on the final day, we should tell the new king, Henry Azberns, too; because at the moment he has Skyglass in his possession."
"Since ice is like glass, it makes sense." Irvyn said. "So the only shelter that can save us is Skyglass. It's time to meet the new king."

Chapter 18
Ritanion
The beginning of the Final day for Irvyn Ritanion

Irvyn was sleeping on one of the stone beds, not to be plunged into the darkness and awakened by the light of the flames on the final day; rather, to spend the night until the arrival of the sun, which was the main light. He had put a thick mattress under the stone bed so that he would not feel the cold as much as possible. It wasn't as warm as his own bed, but it kept him satisfied enough. There were more important things to think about. He was not afraid of the dark, but the eternal darkness was different. No sound could be heard in the hall. If he makes the slightest sound, it will

reverberate throughout the hall; so he fell asleep in the dark without any sound.
When he woke up, he couldn't see anything yet. He didn't know if it was morning or not; because it was dark. He felt the bird of darkness flying towards him to hunt him; as the animal man had told him: the bird of darkness has dark and black eyes and comes to him whenever he wants. Irvyn hastily lit the torch next to his stone. The bird of darkness wasn't there. The flames made his eyes see and hid the bird of darkness. After getting up, he found the way out with the help of torch light. The servants of the hall were sleeping on other stone beds, but there was no sign of Aramis. He left the stairs of the other door of the hall and before leaving, he left the torch turned off inside the hall. It was light outside the hall. It was a little past sunrise and the sky was turning blue. He asked a passerby where he was located in the city. The passerby informed him that he was standing on the Ice Street. This street once witnessed the arrival of the ice rain during the time of Olyns the Conqueror, who had defeated the celestial enemies. The smell of hot cookies from a shop hit

his nose and tempted him to go to the shop. By taking a few coins, the baker gave him hot cookies with fresh bread. Irvyn felt refreshed after eating them. The taste spread throughout his body. It was sweet, tasty and memorable. Guards in red robes paraded through the streets of the city. They were accompanied by several people who had been arrested for the crime they had committed. Irvyn stood in front of one of the guards. He looked at him. He checked the rest of the guards from bottom to top. "What do you want?" said the guard, who was wearing a golden helmet and his black eyes got nervous. "Are you blocking our way, crazy man?"

"Whoa...watch your mouth. You may lose your tongue. Of course, it depends on how you behave from now on. My name is Irvyn Rivernold. I am a ship merchant. I brought some ships with me. I thought to myself that maybe the ship's master, Lord Eric Ritanion, would be interested in them. Tell him that he can see me in the middle white on this street, and if he is late..."

He went a little further. "He might miss some good ships."

The guards were looking at him badly but Irvyn left them. Irvyn had hours until the middle white. He went to see the city. He knew that Eric would definitely recognize him when he heard the name of Rivernold, but only if the guard of the city would convey this news to Eric. It was almost sunset when he went to the blacksmith shop in the poor neighborhood of the capital to sharpen his sword. Many children had gathered in the neighborhood and were playing. Their clothes were dirty and torn with frayed seams. Dirty water was flowing in the middle of the street, garbage was floating on it. Irvyn preferred to walk past them without bumping into them. He stopped by the blacksmith shop. He gave his sword to the blacksmith and explained to him that after sharpening the sword, he should engrave the letter R on its handle. The blacksmith started his work immediately after he took the sword from Irvyn. Irvyn waited there for the blacksmith to finish. A young girl wearing a dress with all kinds of flower patterns on it came out of a house with children. Her red braided hair reached her waist and swayed as she walked. On her head, a purple

flower was attached with a pin, which showed her beauty. Irvyn watched her with the children holding her hands. Irvyn was overwhelmed by the beauty of the young girl when one of the children pointed to him with his hand. The young girl turned her head to Irvyn, whose eyes were focused on her. Irvyn could see her from the opposite angle, but it didn't take long for the girl's face to turn into the bird of darkness. The bird of darkness spread its wings over his head, taking the whole world under its black wings. Irvyn was cursing the darkness of the middle white that had blinded his eyes. He couldn't believe why it had to be dark now? It was unbelievable. He stood under the darkness of the middle white for a few minutes to see the young girl again in the middle white. It was getting late. The black light began to move. When Irvyn's eyes opened, he didn't see anyone on that side. The young girl had disappeared along with the children. The blacksmith had prepared his sword and brought it to him. Irvyn looked at the shine of the sword. It was really unique. He took the hilt of the sword, the letter R was well carved on

it, which was sky blue in color. Giving the blacksmith a few gold coins, he thanked him and continued on his way to see his brother in the middle white in the Ice Street. In order to get to Ice Street faster, Irvyn went through long and narrow alleys. He reached the fourth alley where some people were harassing a girl and scaring her with their loud laughter. Irvyn wanted to pass by without paying any attention, but the girl was very scared and was crying. He came forward and warned the strong men, who were four in number, to move away and leave the girl alone. One of them came forward. He spat at him. Irvyn pulled out the sharpened sword and hit the man in the leg with a quick motion. The man screamed and all the pigeons in the capital flew away. Irvyn knocked the kneeling man down with a kick to his chest. The other three did not dare to come forward and ran away after seeing the scene. The girl, who was terrified, couldn't say anything. Irvyn stepped forward to calm her. When he reached one step, the girl stepped back and beg him not to hurt her. Irvyn decided to go away. He put the sword in the scabbard without

cleaning it and left the alley with a short look. The girl shouted from behind him: "Thank you!"
Irvyn stopped and said to himself: "Really!"
He quickly made his way to Ice Street. It was long past the dawn of the white middle. He reached the middle of the street where the baker's shop was, where Eric was leaning against a wall. "It was very clever that you used the name of our childhood hero. At first, I thought who can be, but..."
Irvyn took his hand and lifted him up. "Who else but you and Wayne?" Eric continued.
"My little brother!" Irvyn came forward and hugged him.
Eric was his brother's height, but thinner and bonier. His face was cold and soulless. Irvyn continued: "You were a fat boy since the last time I saw you, but now your face is nothing but bones. Do you eat less in the capital or does father force you to eat less?"
"But you're no different." Eric replied. "What are you doing here? Why didn't you come inside Skyglass?"
"I wanted to see you first. How is father?"

"He is fine. He is the sword of the king. With his steel hand, he can swing the sword in any direction he wants.
Both of them leaned against the wall. "Tell me about Wayne." Eric asked. "Is that really true? What he did…"
"That idiot. What can I say about him? He took a third of the treasure of the castle with him and ran to Poorvios. I don't know why he did such a thing, but later I heard that he bought mercenaries for himself in Poorvios and created an army of several thousand people. I don't understand what he does at all. I don't know what he wants from life. Before he ran away, he told me that he fell in love with someone and wanted to marry her. Now, instead of getting marry, he built an army."
"Father was very angry about it." Eric said. "He says that Ritanions don't live stupidly. They should be forward-looking and do what is beneficial to their families. Either they should be the sword of unity or justice or the sword of death. Wayne was the sword of justice, and justice drew him to Poorvios."

"Yeah, probably." Irvyn said. "When I got here, I heard that Henry had become the new king. I want to see our new king."
Eric stood up, took his brother's hand and lifted him up. "First of all, you should see father."
Skyglass was illuminated by the light of eternal torches at night. Under the light of the moon with a few stars in the sky, it showed a good brightness. The palace musicians had begun to play, and the sound echoed through the Skyglass and reached the tower of the Sword King, Norris Ritanion. Norris Ritanion was having dinner with his two sons on the 9th night of Tweek. He felt relieved to see Irvyn by his side again. Norris held the fork in his right hand, which had been replaced by a steel prosthesis, and held the knife in the other. He was very slowly and carefully cutting the meat of the roast duck, glancing at Irvyn from time to time. He asked: "Tell me, how is ruling? How do you feel about it? Explain."
Irvyn, who had the meat stuck between his teeth, was trying to pull it out, when he heard his father's voice, he completely forgot about the meat between his teeth. "Hard and complicated."

Norris put the spoon and fork on the table. "Hard and complicated! Just this?"
Irvyn looked at his father. "What do you want me to say, father?"
"What I want to tell you is that ruling is not just humiliating the High Lord of the North in front of your people. Your duty is to command!"
His father's voice was thunderous and a little loud, which separated the soul from the body. Irvyn explained: "I didn't know the news had reached here; Meanwhile, Lord Selwyn burned a man alive with his family and forced the others to watch. So what should I have done?"
Norris said: "He should have been punished! After Wayne escaped, you are the sword of unity and justice. You should have done justice."
"You mean I would kill him! The house of Selwyn is one of your great flag bearers. With this, they would not support you anymore."
"It was, but now it's yours." Norris emphasized. "So you have to learn how to rule them. North is not kept by forgiveness; But with unity, justice and death!"
Irvyn was about to get up and leave the table

when his father asked: "Where are you going?"
"I think I'm fed up with unity, justice and death!"
Irvyn came out of the Sword Tower. He wanted to go to the Great Hall to meet the new King, Henry Azberns. At the bottom of the tower, he saw the guard who had given him the message. Without his golden helmet, he was standing at the bottom of the stairs with several other guards. The skin on his face resembled blood red. It was clear from his style, he is trained and capable. Seeing Irvyn, he said: "The Shipman has become Lord Irvyn Ritanion, Warden of the North!"
Irvyn passed by him saying a sentence: "I see your tongue is still rolling in your mouth!"
He stood in front of the King's Tower. He looked at the first and last clock of the world. The shape of the half-full moon was seen in the middle row at the highest point of the tower. Irvyn compared the silvery light of the clock's half-full moon to the main moon in the sky. The light of the clock moon was more and closer than the moon in the sky. The forms of the sun and the middle white were placed on both sides of it in the order of night-white-day. His heart wanted to touch the

loneliest clock in the world. In his astonishment, he heard a girl's voice. "The girl you saved is one of the servants of Skyglass, who accidently is my servant and companion."
"And who exactly are you?" Irvyn said without turning his head.
The girl took light steps and appeared in front of him. Irvyn could remember her darkened face. It was the same girl he had seen in the slums of the capital. Her bright blue eyes sparkled under the moonlight. He asked himself: How did she get her head out of Skyglass? Why should she have a personal servant? He wanted to ask her all the questions, but by doing this, he would show his curiosity towards her. So he waited for her to speak. The girl remained silent and looked at him. After a long pause, the little girl laughed and said: "It's not supposed to be darkness of the middle white and our faces will disappear again, is it?"
"Yeah, I don't think that's going to happen again." said Irvyn.
"Then you don't know me, but I know you very well, Lord Irvyn." the young girl said.
"I don't think we've seen each other before, of

course, except today."
"I know, but I know much more than you. Okay, let's move on. My name is Relyn, daughter of Lord Lanell. Now you know me."
"I didn't know Lord Lanell had a daughter!" Irvyn said.
"I don't think you know anything, Lord Irvyn." Relyn smiled.
"Not everything, just the things that..."
Relyn waited for Irvyn to finish his sentence. Irvyn had the wrong words stuck in his throat and was looking for the right words so as not to upset Relyn. Irvyn always speaks his words without fear or worry; He didn't care what the other person thought of him, but now he couldn't act like he always did. Those blue eyes were staring at him. It shouldn't have taken long, so he said: "You know what! Everything is important."
"But that's not what you wanted to say, was it?"
"What?" Irvyn laughed. "What do you mean?"
"I have heard a lot about you from others. I know what kind of person you are! Did you want to go inside the great hall?"
"Yeah," Irvyn replied curtly.

"Then I will not disturb you."
Relyn walked past him softly. Irvyn wanted to say something but couldn't. He just watched her go. It was the first time he had been in such a situation and he did not know what to do. He decided to visit her tomorrow, if Relyn was willing to see him again. He was ashamed and unhappy with himself that he had treated her like that. He looked at the clock of the king's tower again and after a moment he entered the king's tower to go to the ruling hall. Inside the ruling hall, Henry was talking with two guards. One of them was the Commander Lord Mid Sir Alest Trini and the other was Sir Kroy Aven, who was always upset. Seeing Irvyn, Henry cut short and sent them outside to speak with the heir to the King's Sword, Irvyn Ritanion, about his coming to the capital. Henry climbed the stairs and sat on the infinity throne. Irvyn carefully examined the hall of the Vach Kingdom from every direction. He stepped forward to approach Henry. He saw the infinity throne. Its twelve rings were empty in the form of a circle. The seven lower rings had cracked; it seemed to him that it was deteriorating

these days, and Henry had to replace them with something else. His father sometimes sat on the throne for the king's justice. If the seven rings were destroyed during his father's rule, it would be considered a conspiracy by the Ritanions who destroyed the infinity throne; so he hoped that this would not happen when his father sat on the throne. The first ring, which stood far above Henry's head on the lower ring, belonged to Roarlion Castle, which was located in the Western Land. Irvyn searched for the Sword's Nepp ring, but the ring was not visible as Henry sat on the infinity throne. Henry wore a gold crown with two golden lions roaring in the middle. "Welcome to the capital Lord Irvyn Ritanion." Henry said. "Most importantly, why are you here? Not that I have a complaint, but I want to know the reason for your coming."

Irvyn took a step forward. "Can't I see my father and brother?"

"Who said you can't? We both know you didn't come here for that!"

Irvyn paused. He looked around and said: "You are right, the main reason I came here is to see

you. My king, the final day is coming…"
A black light in the King's Sea moved at the speed of Olyns the Conqueror. The cold was mixed with the speed of its feet, and when it took its quick steps, the sea water turned into ice. After crossing the King's Sea, it arrived at the Star City. Everywhere it went, all the lights went out. It stood by the Ice Street and looked at Skyglass. A second later, it started to move into the Skyglass. When it passed by the guards, he made a cracking sound; without anyone to see him. Finally, he reached his final destination, the ruling hall. When it entered the ruling hall, it slowed down and walked slowly. With every step he took and came forward, the torches next to it went out. Irvyn fell silent when he heard its footsteps. Seeing it, Henry came down from the infinity throne. The black creature had hidden itself in the darkness. The creature brought itself to the light so that they could see its covered face. Its clothes were completely dark black. On its chest was engraved the image of a blue sword with a two-headed dragon wrapped around the sword. Two small miniature silver dragons were always

moving slowly around its body from top to bottom. Henry could see the golden crown on its head. From the golden crown on the creature's head, golden drops fell to the ground. Irvyn looked behind him. It seemed to him that the bird of darkness had spread its wings and had reached its destination; Where Irvyn was, next to the infinity throne. Irvyn had just realized where the destination of the bird of darkness was. Irvyn drew his sword from its scabbard.

Chapter 20
Ritanion
He was my everything!

Irvyn Ritanion's lifeless body was laid in the temple on a carved stone boulder that was as tall as he was. His face was beautiful and clean. The blood were wiped from his mouth. There was a wound on his body that Henry Azberns had made with his own sharpened sword. Norris was looking at his closed eyes. His tears had stopped. He couldn't bear to cry anymore. He had lost the greatest hope and the best sword of his life. The sword that was supposed to fill his place later. He couldn't believe that Henry had taken his first son from him. Why didn't it matter anymore? The religious brothers of the temple brought Irvyn to the temple this morning and bathed him to

prepare for burial. Norris had ordered them all to leave him alone with his dead son. He caressed his son's hair with his healthy hand; It was still soft, but soulless. There was a cold chill in his hair that Norris's hand would freeze if he stayed too long on that. Norris had never felt such coldness even in winter. Eric entered the temple with breathlessly. He stood in front of his father, on the other side of the boulder Irvyn was resting on. He looked at his brother's face. Irvyn loved him very much and always took care of him during his childhood; Even when he causes problems. But seeing his dead face, he realized that he could no longer help anyone, including himself. When he woke up this morning, he heard the news of his brother's death. He had walked from Skyglass to the temple, praying that it was a lie. He looked at his father. He had never seen him this broken and sad; Even when his mother had died. "He was my first son." Norris said. "My heir, my everything! I loved him more than anything in this world. When he was born, instead of crying, he had a smile on his face. He was smiling at me. I knew that this is what I wanted from God and God gave

him to me. Now, he was taken from me, by Henry!"
"I really don't understand." Eric asked. "Why did Henry kill Irvyn?"
"The reason is not important..."
Norris raised his voice so that it echoed throughout the temple. "What matters is that he did it!"
Eric saw genuine anger in his father's face. "What do we do now?"
Norris took a deep breath and turned to his son. "He should be buried next to his grandfather and his ancestors in the north. You take him to the north, I will come later."
"What do you want to do, father?"
Norris took a few steps away from the boulder. "I will do what is necessary."
Norris returned to Skyglass with his forty riders. He wanted to see the king, the murderer of his son. His men walked behind him towards the King's Tower. Since the sudden incident between Henry and Irvyn last night, the ruling hall had been closed. Many guards were standing by the door of the hall and did not allow anyone to

enter. Norris reached the corridor leading to the ruling hall, with guards standing a yard apart on either side of it. The number of guards were much more than his men. If there was a conflict, he knew he would lose. With his men, he passed through the guards who were surrounded like columns. In front of the closed door of the ruling hall, the Commander Lord Mid Sir Alest Trini, was standing with his own helmet in hand. Glancing at the guards behind him, he sensed they were ready for any move the Commander Lord ordered, but he was still the King's Sword, the second most powerful person in the Vach. Whichever way he took his sword, the guards, including the Commander Lord, had to obey. He asked himself: Are they doing the same thing now? There was a strange silence in the corridor. They used to talk to each other only with their eyes, and Norris's eyes showed anger and rage. Mid Sir Alest gave his helmet to the guard on his right. He approached Norris and ended the fearful silence. "The king wants to be alone."
"I don't care." Norris said. "I command you to open the door."

"Before I take orders from you, I take orders from my king."
Norris gestured to his men with his steel hand. The sound of steel swords being drawn together evoked the song of justice. Norris made another gesture to his men, swords unsheathed and pointed at the guards. "And what is the king's order?"
Mid Sir Alest came forward. The distance between his eyes and Norris was the same distance as the drawn swords of his men towards the guards.
"Kill anyone who tries to disturb my peace inside the ruling hall! It doesn't matter if it's his sword or his family's"
Norris's voice was as sharp as the sound of his men drawing their swords: "He killed my family with his sword!"
By saying this sentence, the conflict started. Norris's men attacked the spear guards with steel swords. A sword struck a spear, splitting the spear in two. The guard whom his spear split in two, hesitated and the sword went through his polished armor and split his chest. The man fell to his

knees as the shouted. The man with the sword was about to deliver the next and final blow. He hesitated like a wounded and kneeling guard. As he was about to raise the sword, a spear hit him in the back; the spear was thrown with such force that it came out in front of him. The sword was released from his hand and he fell to the ground side by side with the kneeling guard. The conflict had reached its peak. A fierce battle had taken place in the small corridor with little space where they could hardly defeat each other. If they took just one wrong step, spears and swords would be sent in every direction. Norris wanted to draw his sword. Mid Sir Alest, who was standing near him, was holding his healthy hand. Norris's steel hand could do nothing more. Mid Sir Alest took advantage of his weakness and pulled out Norris's steel sword, which was made of Swordwin steel. After pulling out his sword, he aimed the sharp blade at Norris. "Finish this lunatic!"

Lord Huntly of Lanell, Lord of Words and called the Sharp Tongue, stopped the fight with his shout. He had made a broad crown with short, dark brown branches and put it on the black hair

of his head. He came from the Crown Island which were destroyed during the war at the beginning of Richard Azberns' rule. Crown Island looked like a broad crown from above. It is said that after the destruction of Crown Island, he made the crown on his head, which reminds him of where he came from whenever he looks at himself in the mirror. The crown above his head was connected by thousands of slender branches, which contained thousands of words, making him a Lord of words. The courtiers joked behind his back: "Whenever the water reaches the crown of Lord Huntly of Lanell, new words came to his tongue." The skin of his face was brown in color, which matched with the crown on his head. Lord Huntly came towards Norris from among the dead. The sword was still held against Norris's throat. If Lord Huntly's voice hadn't ended the fight, Mid Sir Alest might have cut Norris' throat by now. Lord Huntly shook his head. "What are you doing? Do you kill each other in the corridor of the ruling hall? Norris I know you lost your son, but this is not the way. The king has not let anyone in since last night. I don't know why? But

he has his own reasons, so..."
Norris took the tip of his own sword with his steel hand and slowly lowered it Alest's head. He turned to Lord Huntly. "No matter how you talk logically, it still doesn't explain why he doesn't want to see anyone? He killed my son! If he doesn't want to talk, then let it be. The way we act. The sword does not speak!"
"Norris, please, this is not the way." Lord Huntly said. "The old king wants to see you."
He said to the others who were ready with swords and spears for the battle to start again: "Put down your weapons, it's over!"
Norris saw Richard Azberns lying on the bed. Seeing the sword of his rule, Richard tried to get up. Norris sat next to him on the chair without saying a word. The old king coughed repeatedly as he got up and saw the handkerchief he was holding over his mouth. The blood from his throat was stuck on the handkerchief. He put the handkerchief next to his bed. "I'm really sorry for your loss. What happened last night has shocked all of us. I wanted to talk to Henry, but he has locked himself in the ruling hall and no one

knows why. I promise you that justice will be fulfill for your son. But before that, we need to know what happened."
"Henry killed my son, it happened and it's very simple."
"Have you ever wondered why Henry would want to kill your son the day he got here?"
Norris took the ring of his signet sword out from his finger and placed it on the bed. "For 21 years I have sworn and served as your sword for your kingdom; as you swore and served for Iryn Highwill. Iryn Highwill killed your daughter and in return you took over her throne with my help. I think history will never change and that tragedy is going to happen again. Only with the difference that I am not doing this under the pretext of getting the infinity throne. I do this for my son's blood. As long as Henry is alive, I can't deal with this."
"I have not taken the throne for myself." Richard said "Rather, I took possession for the peace that should have been created. This peace lasted for 21 years. Please don't do this. Don’t ..."
Richard coughed again. He was about to say the

next word when he coughed. He looked around his bed for his handkerchief to cover his mouth. His body was shaking and his hand was shaking in every direction. Blood spewed out after every cough and stained the blanket over his legs. His hand stopped shaking and he put it on his heart. He said the word: "Peace"

His breathing became quiet, so quiet that it was no longer audible. He fell on the bed. His eyes were staring at the ceiling. Norris stood over him in surprise and watched him. Richard took his healthy hand and repeated: "Peace...Peace..."

The old king closed his eyes forever. The old and tired lion subsided and died down in the bed of his youthful roars.

It had been two years since Norris Ritanion had last crossed the Wild Bridge, coming to Sword's Nepp for the New Year's Feast, but now he was coming to gather his army. The Wild Bridge was made entirely of ice. The traces that remained on the surface of the water in the form of ice was from the second ice age. Its width reached three miles. The wild bridge was connected to the land on both sides. The spell in the wild bridge

prevented the ice from melting; even on hot summer days! Norris reached the middle of the wild bridge with his horse. He got off the horse. As he stepped on the smooth ice that looked like a mirror, he felt as cold as he had felt when he touched Irvyn's hair. The horse's hooves were restless and were kicking on the ice. The rest of Norris's men were behind him on their horses. Their horses began to neigh. The voices of the horses made Norris nervous. He pulled out his leather glove and kneel on the ice, put his palm on the ice. He felt the power of the north, the real north that began from the wild bridge and ended in the mountain of conqueror. He felt all of this in his body. With his cold hand, he touched his face to transfer the coldness of the north. With his sharp eyes, he saw Sword's Nepp, which was located west of the north, like a small sword.

As he approached to Sword's Nepp, the little sword had become the biggest sword he had ever seen. He returned to his real and eternal home in the north. The capital would never be his home. After entering the castle, Eric was waiting for him in the yard. Seeing his father, Eric quickly came

to him. Norris came down from the horse. His face was white like ice. "What happened, father?"
"The old king died."
Eric was curious. "How?"
"His heart stopped beating. Of course, not by me. What happened to Irvyn?"
"We brought Irvyn, but we haven't buried him yet." Eric replied.
"Why?"
"Adgar and Rylord Brant say something different about Irvyn." Eric said.
Norris handed the reins to his companion, Kassten, and walked beside Eric to the main hall.
"What?"
"Irvyn had made a will before he left. You have to talk to them yourself."
In the main hall, Irvyn's body was laid on a large table in the middle, around which all the people in the castle, including knights, guards, servants, and workers, were gathered. Adgar was standing the closest. Norris entered the hall with Eric. They opened a way for him to go to his son's body which. Passing through them, he reached Adgar, who was staring at Irvyn's body. Adgar

had not yet noticed Norris' presence. "What did he want us to do?" Norris asked.
Adgar turned his face, his face was full of tears. He bowed. "My Lord"
Rylord Brent ordered the others to leave the hall. All the people in the castle were saddened to see Irvyn's body, and the people close to him were the most upset. Minutes later they left Norris, Eric, Adgar and Rylord Brent alone in the hall with Irvyn's body. Rylord came to Norris. "My lord, I am sorry for this great sorrow. Losing the eldest son is considered the biggest loss for a father. But for Irvyn Ritanion's last will, he was sensitive about a lot of things before he left us, and even more so about his death! He had made a room for himself between the rooms of the greats of the Ritanions. He told me that instead of being buried, he wanted to be placed inside the room on a stone boulder that he had made.
"Why?" Norris wondered.
"He wanted his body to destroy with the others on the final day when the great ice falls from the sky." Adgar replied. "Not buried under the soil."
Norris alone carried Irvyn's body to the room he

had prepared. He placed Irvyn's body on the boulder. He put the sword he had made for him on him slowly and wrapped his hands around the sword. There were already lit torches in the room. He took one of the torches and turned off the others. He stopped for a moment to look at his son's face for the last time. It was cold and soulless. He saw the leather suit and shiny steel armor that Irvyn was wearing. The pattern of three swords was beautifully engraved on the steel armor. Norris broke down and cried. Since the last time he was alive, he had hurt him with his words and now he regretted it. The last three words that he had said: Unity, justice and now, death! He left the room with a torch in his hand. He closed the door of Irvyn's room, which was the fifth room, and left Irvyn Ritanion alone there until the final day. After closing the door, he said: "Sleep my son until the final day"

Chapter 21
Azberns
Where is the King?

The bells were sounding in Skyglass and Star city; almost after 22 years!
It meant a thing. The king was dead!
Richard Azberns was brought to be placed in the Hall of Bones alongside the kings of Highwill. The Old King's Knights held their swords in a kneeling posture. Enaya Azberns was quiet. Several men in black were respectfully placing the body of the old king inside a wooden coffin with a glass cover. Richard Azberns, called the Old King, was the first Azberns among the Kings of Highwill to be buried in the Hall of Bones. His name was engraved on the golden frame of the chain handle so that it would shine like the sun among other identical frames. After placing the body of the old king, they closed the glass cover

of the coffin. Two guards wearing white cloaks were pulling the chains. The coffin of Richard Azberns, the old king, went down into the depths of the earth.

Enaya saw the last moments without the presence of the king, her husband. Since the incident between Henry and Irvyn, Henry has not been seen. Her twins stood next to Lord Thailus as they watched their grandfather's burial in the Hall of Bones. After rising, the knights sheathed their swords one after the other with a certain unison. Everyone left the hall except Enaya. Enaya was alone. Alone, without her father. She cried a little. She remembered the day when she and her twin sister, Enara, rode on the lion statues of the Roarlion. Each of them riding on one of the lions smiled toward the father. Her father always said: "My two golden lioness." But Enaya was the one who had lost two golden lions; her sister, who had been burned alive by people, and her father, who had gone into the grave a few minutes ago. Some have rumored that Norris Ritanion, the king's sword, strangled his father. The sword who said that he finally cut his throat and ran away after

the king's death. If it was true, his two golden lions were killed by others, and none experienced normal death.

Sometime after mourning for her father and the memory of her sister, she came out of the Hall of Bones with a wet face. She went to her room to rest for a while and dream about the happy memories she wished to see. Focusing on the good things that happened between her father and sister, she closed her eyes. She saw the same strange dream again. A purple light from the west to the east showed itself to the world like the darkness of the middle white. She was walking among the ashes with old clothes that resembled the vassals of the capital; everything was destroyed around her and she is rising from the rubble. Two real golden lions walked proudly beside her like her guardians. She wondered. The darkness inside her eyes disappeared when she saw the ray of purple light. It was as if thousands of years passed for her every moment she couldn't see, and the moment she opened her eyes, she seemed happy with excitement and confusion. When the two lions next to her came out of the ashes, they

roared at the crowd, and causing the people's bodies to tremble. They wanted her...
"Mom.....mom..."
Enaya woke up from her dream which didn't know what it meant by hearing a familiar voice. The sunlight from the window of the room, which did not have a curtain in front of it, shone directly on her bed and warmed her along with the bed. This heat was useful in winter, but in summer it only bored her and ruined her mood. Maybe it's because of the heat that she had such baseless dreams, the meaning of which was not clear at all. Felios always shook her and called her with his sweet voice. Enaya got up. She put her hand on her face "Is it morning?" she asked her son.
"No, Mom." Felios laughed. "You have only slept for an hour. The middle white don't come yet! "Rylord Grassin is standing at your door and he wants to talk to you about my father and other things."
Felios took his mother's hand and asked with a sad face: "Why doesn't father come out of the ruling hall? I want to see him."

Enaya hugged her son. "Your father needs to be alone to think for a while. When the time is right, you can see it."
"When will he show himself?" Felios raised his head and said.
"I don't know." Enaya said the only word that came to her mind.
Someone knocking on the door of the room, disturbing the peace of Enaya and Felios. "I almost forgot." Enaya said. "Go play with your brother and tell Rylord Grassin to come in. It's no good keeping him behind the door."
Felios nodded his head. He went to the door, and opened it. In front of the opened door, Rylord Grassin and Lord Lanell were standing. "Come in, my lords." Felios said.
Felios walked past them and left the room. After entering, Rylord Grassin took a seat. Lord Lanell stood solemnly next to him. On the chest of Rylord Grassin, a golden pin was attached, the sunlight shone on it and its reflection hit Enaya's eyes. Enaya, who was bothered by the pin in her newly awakened eyes, pointed to the pin with her finger and requested: "Can you..."

As soon as he saw Enaya's finger, Rylord Grassin noticed and quickly removed it from his chest. "Of course, Your Highness. The first time I attached this to my chest, I felt a certain sense of pride. But that feeling of pride turned into a sense of duty that every time I attach the pin to my chest, I remember where I came from, where I belong and most importantly, what I came for. I came here to serve you today for one of my important duties. Telling the truth and unpleasant news is one of the hardest things I have to do."

Enaya was worried. She prayed that good words would come out of Rylord Grassin's mouth, but when she saw the embarrassment on his face, she became more worried. "What happened?"

"First, I must tell you the truth," Rylord Grassin said. “You should know the truth about your husband, the king. Henry is not in Skyglass."

"What do you mean that Henry isn't in Skyglass?" Enaya asked. "He has locked himself in the ruling hall."

"This is what we told you." Lord Lanell said. "That night, when we found the lifeless body of Irvyn Ritanion on the ground with a sword

embedded in his body, there was no sign of the king. He had disappeared; So that no one saw how he got out of Skyglass, even the guards at the door of the ruling hall! After that night when we removed the body of Irvyn Ritanion from the hall, we closed the door of the hall of rule with guards and told the others, including you, that the king does not want to see anyone. Only the lords of the court and you know this truth, but it won't take long for the others to find out."

Enaya was saddened by the lie they had told her. Now she knew why Henry had not attended his father's funeral. Because he wasn't there. "Where do you think he went in this situation?"

"We don't know." Rylord replied. "Henry is not the kind of person who leaves the palace all at once and doesn't tell anyone where he went. I think it has something to do with what happened between him and Irvyn Ritanion."

"What happened? Why should he kill Irvyn Ritanion?"

Lord Lanell said: "This question we all ask ourselves and only one person knows the answer, the king himself."

Rylord Grassin rose from his chair. He went to one of the windows. He opened the knotted curtain slowly with his hands that were shaking. The curtain completely covered the window; He did not leave even a small spot for the sunlight to shine through. He sat back on the chair and attached the gold pin to his chest. "Your Highness, we told the truth, but the news remains; since unfortunately the king is not present in Skyglass, you have to hear this news. The first news is that Norris Ritanion has mobilized the whole north to take revenge on the king for the death of his son. He wants to rebel against the Vach under in the name of avenging his son, and he won't stop fighting until Henry is dead. We must be ready for the attack of the northerners. If Norris's army crosses the Wild Bridge, their next destination is your fatherland. The land of unique lions."
"And the other news?" said Anaya.
Rylord was speechless and did not dare to speak. He looked suspiciously at Lord Lanell. "There's nothing worse than Henry's disappearance and the rebellion of the northerners!" Enaya said.

Lord Lanell said: "This news is about your son Peter. I'm sorry to tell you this, but sooner or later you have to know. Sir Durand Ferron is back, but without your son. Sir Durand loses Peter in the Hope Harbor and instead of returning to the capital, he looks for him. He searched the harbor along with all the ships that were present, and the ship that left the harbor the earliest at night was the ship that was going to Paradise. Sir Durand also moves towards Paradise with the next ship and when he arrived in Paradise; without informing the Rkings, he looked for Peter, but he didn't find him. I think Peter is lost like his father."

"This can't be true. We have to find him, wherever he is." Enaya said.

Rylord Grassin felt sympathy. "I know this is hard to believe, but where should we look for him, your Highness? Maybe Peter continued on his way alone. All we can do is wait."

"What are we waiting for?"

"To face the truth." Lord Lanell said.

Enaya did not know which one was more painful for her; the loss of her father a few hours ago, her

husband who thought he was locked in the Hall of Ruler but had actually disappeared, or her son who was missing on a mission given to him by Henry. She was afraid of the worst news, which was the news of their death. She remembered her dream, maybe the two lions she saw in her dream were her son and husband. With the roar they made and walked next to her, he informed the world. Was that roar a sign of death that informed the rest? But their roar was different. His twins asked her about their father every day. She told them what Rylord Grassin had told her. She didn't want to lie about something she wasn't sure about. With these annoying thoughts, the days were passing. She waits, just waits. She didn't know what to expect? At least it was the only thing she could do. Waiting and waiting, without doing anything, had become the hardest thing possible for she. The servants brought her food several times, but she did not want to eat. She left the food untouched on the bed. Sometimes, when she was bored, she looked out of the window to see a familiar face from her family, but she was only had two familiar faces, who played on her

bed most of the time. She calmed down a bit by seeing them and forgot all the indescribable things for a few seconds. When she got tired of waiting, she slept to forget.

It had been four days. Her worries had increased. All the lords and knights of the palace waited for her orders. There was no news of Henry and his son Peter. Lord Lanell had told her that the news of the King's disappearance would soon spread to Skyglass, and he was right. Skyglass was thrown into confusion by the disappearance of Henry Azberns. Everyone would asked: Why did the king run away? Is he afraid of Norris Ritanion's anger and went to hide himself somewhere? Norris Ritanion's army was being completed as the news spread around the palace. Enaya feared that if he attacked the capital, the city would fall in a day. But Lord Lanell had assured her that the Northmen did not have enough ships to attack from the sea, and the Troylo's harbor had been destroyed by the earthquake. After a few days passed since the unfortunate event that happened between Henry and Irvyn, Enaya dared to see the place where it happened; so she went to the ruling

hall. She was taking light steps in the corridor leading to the hall so as not to make a sound. Inside the hall, a man wearing a helmet was standing and looking at the infinity throne. Enaya stood next to him. Lord Thailus bowed. "My queen, the monarchy needs some small changes. Some of the officials of the court are vacant and their places should be filled by reliable persons who will not become enemies of the monarchy tomorrow. I believe you can choose people who are suitable for these positions. After all, you are the queen."

Enaya looked into his proud eyes. "The king will return in a few days, and until then the necessary decisions will be made to appoint people to positions; especially yours, Lord Thailus."

"Don't misunderstand my words, Your Highness. I just want to help you. If Norris Ritanion finds out about the disappearance of the king and your son, he can take advantage of this issue. I don't want to be rude, I just try and hope it never happens."

"Kings sometimes go on journeys that last for months." Enaya said. "This is not a reason because

the king is not in his house, there is no king."
"That is the time when it is clear where the king has gone. We do not know exactly where Henry has gone, Your Highness. After that night, he disappeared and even the guards at the door of the ruling hall did not see him!"
"He's coming back. I promise, Lord Thailus."
"We also pray that this happens as soon as possible."
Lord Thailus bowed and left Enaya alone inside the Ruling Hall. One by one, Enaya climbed the seven steps leading to the Infinity Throne. The last step was wider and more different in color, it was white with black lines. Enaya reached the last step. She thought she heard something break; Like the sound of glass breaking , maybe the sound of a sword breaking, or the sound of breaking ice. The sound in her ears started with a small whisper and gradually reached its peak. Enaya also passed the seventh step and approached the infinity throne. She touched the infinity throne with her finger; Even though the sunlight was shining on it from the ceiling window, the throne was cold. She saw the shadow that always fell beside the throne. The

two lions had disappeared. She thought to himself: "maybe Henry and Peter are..." she whispered: "This is impossible!"

The seventh, eighth and ninth days ended without any special events. The tenth day of the king's absence came with the arrival of a heavy rain like a storm. Enaya Azberns was sitting in a chair in the council room, waiting for the other lords. As always, the first person to arrive before the others was Rylord Grassin. He had a heavy coat of fur and wool. His hair was wet. After entering, Rylord bowed. Enaya did not pay special attention to him. She answered him by her head. Rylord sat quietly on the walnut chair to Enaya's right. He wanted to say something when Enaya started talking before him. "No news of my son and husband?"

"We have more important matters to discuss, Your Highness. But we still have no news."

Lord Clyve, the blind fox, the blind man of the court, and the Master of the coin, entered with coins shaking in his hand. A red cloth was tied over his eyes. Even though he was blind, he was able to walk well with his senses like normal

people and knew who is in front of him even without saying a word. He explains that he can see the world with a different view from behind the cloth. Some people in the court doubted his blindness and said: "How can he act like a seer with his eyes closed? Or maybe he is a skilled sorcerer." Lord Clyve's hair was of three colors: gold, silver and copper. He put gold and silver coins on the table and pulled out a chair for himself. Enaya was staring at the coins that Lord Clyve had placed on the table. Those coins belonged to Poorvios, with various forms of weapons engraved on them. Lord Clyve said: "What a disgrace! It is very terrible. We have lost three generations of the king in one tweek. The first one was rumored to have been killed by Norris Ritanion, the second one is said to have run away, and the third one is also missing. My queen, we must do something. The enemy is getting closer and closer. Informants reported that Norris had crossed the wild bridge with his army. He does not accept any negotiation. He is so ruthless that he killed Lord Ben Selwyn, one of his standard-bearers and a high-ranking Lord of the

North, and declared his brother as the new Lord of White fear. The whole north is afraid of him."
"He's a monster, there is no doubt about it." Enaya said.
"A monster who lost his son and wants to punish the world." the blind fox said. "He seeks revenge on the murderer of his son. The question is, if he can't take his revenge on king, who does he want to take revenge on?"
The blind fox gave an answer to his question: "Us."
Rylord Grassin sneezed. The cold rainy weather had made him sick today. When he sneezes, he covers his face with his long sleeve so as not to make others sick like himself. He finished his fourth sneeze when he said. "Norris cannot attack the capital directly. First, he has to deal with Ronson Azberns, the Lord of Roarlion, who is in front of him. It will not be easy for him to defeat Henry's brother. As long as Ronson Azberns keeps him busy in the Westland, we have time to get ready. My queen, you must make great decisions in these circumstances; however, you are currently in the position of the king and we

are acting according to your orders."
Enaya thought to herself that what was more importance to her now? Family or country? She had never been in such a situation before and she didn't know what to do. She should decide what is best for the country. "Rylord Grassin, you should..."
Lord Thailus was the last who arrived. The attention of others was distracted towards him. Drops of water were dripping from his wet clothes. The sound of his boots was pounding. When he walked step by step, he made the ground muddy. "My queen, the king is back!" he said to Enaya with a smile on his face.

Chapter 22
Ritanion
The bloody moon

Flags hanging from gray tents fluttered prominently in the air with the wind. The biggest flag belonged to the House of Ritanion, with three great swords beautifully drawn on it. The sky was filled with gray clouds, the same color as the tents, and there was a hint of rain coming, but it didn't appear yet. The sun had been hiding between them for several hours; As far as the tents extended to the horizon, the flat ground could be seen. Adgar Ritanion was standing with his horse by the free road, far from the tents. From the other side of the wild bridge, the army of a thousand people was coming. From its flags, which had a steel shield with a sun engraved on it, it was clear that they belonged to the house of Harrop. Two hundred horsemen in the front, the

first row of which was made up of knights, and the rest of them were infantrymen who were coming behind them with spears in their hands. The wild bridge was full of men with weapons in hand, moving with their heavy weight on the old ice. Adgar thought to himself: if the ice began to break and crumble while all those soldiers were walking together, all of Lord Harrop's soldiers would go through the broken ice into the water. And thousands of people perished along with the bridge that was the only land path to the north. The wild bridge had not been destroyed since the beginning of the human world. Adgar hoped that it would not be ruined even today as new soldiers were added to their army. After Lord Harrop's soldiers had crossed the wild bridge, Adgar galloped his horse towards the gray tents along the road. In the center of the tents, a different dark blue tent was clearly visible. Adgar rode his horse to the tent that belonged to Norris Ritanion. Unclear voices of the northern Lords, along with the voice of Norris, came out of the tent. They were making a plan about how to attack. Adgar rode his horse through the tents of

the soldiers and reached the middle blue tent. He got off the horse. As he came down, the steel armor collided with the sword that he was holding, and the sound of two rare Swordwin steels was heard. Adgar pulled aside the tent cloth with his sword and went inside. A large map of Hallstreet, covering only the western lands to the capital, was laid on the table. Norris had pointed with his steel finger in the direction they wanted to attack. The other lords of the north surrounded him. They each discussed how to move forward, giving him feedback. Eric was the only person sitting on the chair without paying attention to what they were saying. All Eric wanted was a quick and direct attack; not a clever one which last forever. Adgar moved forward. "Lord Harrop's thousand soldiers, have just crossed the wild bridge and will join the camp in a few minutes, my lord. Their commander is Lord Harrop's second son, Malcolm."

"Why didn't he come himself?" asked Lord Saron Richmond. "Why didn't he send his first son with their army?"

"Lord Harrop was poisoned by his first wife a few

days ago and is sick in bed." Adgar said. "His first son also sings songs and poems of hope for him so that he will recover fully."
"To a full recovery in song and poetry! What's this? We had heard that doctors bring people to full recovery, but songs and poetry....isn't it some kind of charm for health that we don't know about?" Lord Kallphen flame sneered.
"It doesn't matter." Norris said. "We need the soldiers he sent who just arrived here. It is not our concern how he wants to recover fully."
Lord Dermot Tallmen said: "Now that we have all our forces together and stationed here, we must think of a strong ally in this war. The Taleskis have the most powerful army in the Vach; they've even grown stronger since their young king ran away."
"When the young king, Mid Sairion Talesky, took the capital, Richard Azberns asked me to help him and fight for him." Norris said. "I did the same and after capturing the capital, I served as the king's sword. At this time, the young king Henry Azberns was sitting on the infinity throne and the same old thing is going to happen. If I use

the Taleskis to avenge my son, the cycle of revenge will turn again for us, and the Taleskis will rebel against us one day. This cycle must be stopped and I will stop it. When we have conquered the five kingdoms alive, we can rule without relying on any Houses until the Final day, so that perhaps the last of the northerners will live to sit on the infinity throne."

Norris pointed again to the Bloody Moon Castle on the map. "This is the castle of the bloodthirsty Berkens, one of the flagships of Ronson Azberns. Informants reported that the people of Bloody Moon Castle were moving towards Roarlion when we crossed the wild bridge. Ronson Azberns called his men towards Roarlion to defend Roarlion with all his strength. We have to conquer the bloody moon that is blocking our way. But never make a big mistake. Kervens Berken is the worst character in the West and a man of cunning and mistrust towards the Azberns, which is considered twice as bad for us; That is, we should not underestimate it. I am sending two thousand soldiers to capture the bloody moon, which seems to be empty. Lord

Saron Richmond, the commander of these two thousand..."
Eric stood up and interrupted his father. "Father, let your death sword do this for you. I promise to turn the bloody moon like itself into red blood on the flags."
"I have no objection to that, if you agree, my lord." Lord Saron said.
Norris nodded in agreement. Adgar came forward and knelt down. "Let me go to protect your son, my lord."
On the day of the conquest of the bloody moon, Adgar's hair had turned light brown under the golden sunlight. Polished steel armor clung to his chest in the warm air. He wanted to take it off, but during the battle, without the steel armor, his death was certain. Along with the riders, Eric was ahead of everyone on the free road, riding his horse. Infantry soldiers with a special arrangement of shields and spears were coming next to each other. He tightened the reins of the horse to make the horse move faster. His horse quickly caught up with Eric's horse in front. Eric sat proudly on his war horse, lost in shiny steel armor like

himself. He had a confident face. Adgar looked at Eric's bony face. "How did he die?"
"Didn't you see his body? The sharp blade of his sword pierced his heart. I will kill that bastard for killing my brother. Be sure, cousin, I will do it myself. It has to be me."
Adgar was curious. "Did you see Henry kill him?"
"No, I didn't see it, no one did. When the others entered the Ruling Hall, blood had dripped on the seven steps leading to the Infinity Throne. Irvyn's lifeless body was lying on the ground with his own sword embedded in his body."
"Why should Henry kill Irvyn?" Adgar asked his third question.
Eric held the horse. "I don't know. As my father said, the reason is not important anymore. The important thing is that he brutally put the sword into my brother's heart, do you understand? We must insert our sword into the corrupt heart of Henry; as the bloodthirsty Berkens say, blood responds the blood. Now, you, me and this army must conquer that damned castle to open our way forward; So don't ask so many questions and think, cousin. Think how to win this war;

because if we lose, we lose forever."
A horse was approaching them. He was wearing a helmet like a wolf's head. Sir Tyvis Warren's horse stopped a step away from Eric. He removed his wolf-like helmet from his head. His olive colored hair had come out. "It's only a mile to Bloody Moon Castle." said Sir Tyvis. “I did not see any guards at the gate or on the wall from a distance. Of course, the gate of the castle was wide open; it seems that they vacated the castle and went to Roarlion.
Eric was happy. "See? It seems that our path has been opened without any problems."
Eric's army arrived at the Bloody Moon Gate. The bricks and stones of the castle were red-gray in color. No flags hung from the walls of Bloody Moon Castle. Inside and outside the castle was silent like a cemetery. Its large wooden gates were wide open. Adgar observed the inside of the castle from outside. There was a certain chaos everywhere in the castle. In his opinion, probably the Berkens and their men were afraid of the northerners reaching this side of the wild bridge and started to run away; So that the swords,

spears, shields, and other war tools lying on the ground showed their terror. They did not have enough time to take their war tools with them. Eric rode his war horse, a brown mare in steel clothing, by the gate. "It's time to take this damned castle." he shouted.

Cavalry and infantry soldiers raised their swords and spears and confirmed Eric's words together. "Yes, yes, yes."

Eric was the first who entered the castle. Adgar and the riders entered the Bloody Moon castle after Eric. The horses moved in gently. Adgar kept his horse on one side of the yard next to Eric. He looked around. The mess was more obvious from the inside; it was as if there was an earthquake inside the castle and everything was messed up and disorganized in every direction. Almost all the horsemen came inside, along with a few soldiers with spears in hand. Some soldiers on foot and on horseback rushed into the buildings of the castle to search around. A group of crows sat on the walls of the castle side by side with a short distance. They numbered as much as Eric's remaining cavalry. Drops of blood drip down

from their bloody Beaks. Their terrifying caws were everywhere. A group of more than hundreds of crows were cawing with each other scared Eric's soldiers. Eric became nervous and worried. He was riding a horse with others watching the blood crows. He gestured to one of his archers with the movement of his hand. The archer put the arrow in the bowstring and aimed at one of the crowing blood crows. The released arrow hit a crow's eye. After the crow fell, the other crows became silent and quickly flew away. The gate of the castle was suddenly closed. People rose from the walls. The archers on the wall were shooting at them with fiery arrows. "Get your shields up!" Eric yelled.

Fiery arrows were hurled at Eric's soldiers with great force, one after another. Eric's men did not have a chance to raise their shields; because the arrows had taken the opportunity. A direct shot hit Eric's horse. The horse neighed and dropped Eric to the ground. The riders were covered in fire and blood. An arrow was hit in the eye of one of the riders. He screamed in pain and anger. With his hand, he grabbed the end of the arrow,

which was made with a red feather, and slowly pulled the arrow out. The arrow came out along with his eye. He saw it with his other eye, which was not yet exposed to the fiery arrows. A fear had cast a dark shadow in his being. He was about to say something when suddenly an arrow shot into his open mouth and silenced him forever. He staggered off his horse and fell to the ground when another arrow hit him in the back and killed him. Most of the riders were surprised by fiery arrows. Arrows were sent from every direction and killed them. Adgar was still alive on the horse. He cut the arrows that were coming towards him in half with his sword. Adgar took a chance to carefully look over the wall. Archers stood on the wall, on both sides, facing inward and outward, back to back, and ready to shoot. Those who were inside and outside the castle were targeted with their fiery arrows. The infantry soldiers raised their shields as soon as they saw the archers. When the arrows stopped, they lowered their shields but archers would release arrows towards them very quickly, but carelessly. Out of a hundred arrows that were released, but

some of them hit the target and threw the men on top of the wall, and turning the ground red with their blood. Adgar could hear their bones breaking. Eric, who had fallen from his horse, was clutching the ground. He was looking for a shelter to survive their fiery arrows and cursed them with his tongue. He took a spear that was next to the fallen bodies. He threw it at one of the archers with a precise aim. The spear hit the knee of one of them with a strong impact. The archer behind him, who was shooting outside the castle, wanted to hold his hand so that he wouldn't fall, but it was too late. He stretched his hand further down, but the man fell with a spear in his knee, and when he hit the ground, his head hit the body of the wall and fell on the ground. The archer, quickly gathered himself up. He took an arrow from the archer and put it in the bow. He shot at Eric with anger on his face and shaking hands. Eric's saw the arrow getting closer to him with his two brown eyes. Eric stayed there without moving. Only his eyes were watching the shot. Something pushed Eric and threw him to a side and the shot missed. Adgar had thrown himself

from the horse. He picked Eric up. "We should go inside, it might be safer than here."
Both of them dragged themselves into the hall. Eric's soldiers were lying on the ground with their horses. Their bodies were red with blood. It was a cruel slaughter. The enemy had surprised them both inside and outside. Adgar walked intelligently among the dead bodies and thought to himself: Where are the damned Berkens? His throat was dry. Eric was walking next to him, sensitive and worried. He got furious when he saw the corpses of his people. They reached the middle of the hall. A fireplace that was lit in the hot summer weather was In front of them. There was so much firewood that the flames spread in every direction. They stopped there for a few moments so the enemy show himself. Those moments were such sensitive and dangerous moments in their lives. Adgar felt something. The corpses on the ground were shaking and healthy bodies came out from under them with swords in their hands. It didn't take a minute before they surrounded Adgar and Eric. Their number reached fifty people. Another men also came from

the other rooms and surround the two Ritanions. Eric drew his sword from its leather scabbard made of rabbit skin. The two Ritanions were trapped among countless enemy people and did not think that they would survive. The enemies, who had formed a large circle around them, took the shields forward and brought the pointed swords forward from between the; so that they wanted to compress the big circle little by little. Adgar felt that surviving among them was the second miracle of his life, which made him truly a miracle man. One of the men lowered his shield and came forward to hit him. Adgar guarded with his sword and parried the blow. With the other hand holding the dagger, he wounded the man's leg. The screaming man fell to his knees. With a fast movement, Adgar cut his throat. The kneeling man held his torn throat with both hands and fell on the ground. Another person approached from Eric's side. Eric held his sword in front of him and swung his sword at the shields. As he turned, the others went back a little, but the man persevered. He slowly came forward with a face that showed anger. He hit Eric with

his sword. Eric guarded, but the blow was so strong that he lost his balance and fell on the ground. The sword was released from his hand. Adgar who was busy with the armed men on his side and trying to bring them to certain death, saw Eric. The angry man was standing over Eric. Adgar throw his sword towards him. The sword tore his beautiful thick dress covered with silver armor and entered his stomach. Fell on Eric with his eyes open. Eric forcibly lifted his body. Adgar and Eric stood back to back again; Of course, this time without weapons! Their breaths had become deeper. "I didn't see this war like that," Eric said.
"What do you mean?"
The men put the shields on the ground and cautiously went towards them. Eric was about to say something when the riders entered the hall with their horses. Eric saw his father holding the reins of the horse with his steel hand and the sword with the other. They charged towards the men who surrounded Adgar and Eric and killed them. Many riders entered the hall; it was his father's guardian knights who took care of him. Each of them attacked the enemy from a side and

killed one by one to reduce their number. Sir Narek Dart, with his huge war mace, could hardly swing the club in the air. He struck the shield of one of the men with that large mace. The man with the shield resisted and held the shield in front of him. The blow was so strong and heavy that it not only broke the shield, but also shattered the chest of the man holding the shield. Adgar took full advantage of the created situation. He picked up a sword from the ground and attacked them. Eric had also become brave at that moment and seemed happy with the arrival of Sword's Nepp's knights. It didn't take long for his father's knights to kill all the enemy who were present in the hall until the last one. Norris, red in the face, dismounted. He came to Eric. "The commander thinks before doing anything, rather than acting hastily. Irvyn knew this and Henry killed him. We also have to act smart to kill Henry. If we don't, any Azberns bannermen with three or four hundred men can destroy us, and no one is afraid of the northerners."

Chapter 23
Ritanion
The hidden truth

"**W**here have you been in the last ten days? You left me alone with all these heavy responsibilities. You didn't even attend my father's funeral! You lost it too! Henry... Henry, why don't you say anything? I am talking to you!"
Enaya was crying and talking. "Why did you kill Irvyn Ritanion that night? The whole north started war against us and soon they will reach here. Why don't you talk?"
Henry was silent, he didn't say anything. He had not spoken to anyone since the day he returned. He was constantly thinking. From morning to night, he used to lie on the bed alone in his room and stare at the window. On his face, there was a deep pain of sadness that Enaya did not know why. Enaya could no longer understands the

reason for his actions. She felt that she no longer knew the man she had lived with for more than twenty years. Enaya wiped her tears with a white cloth. She went to one side of the bed. She gently asked again: "What happened to you? Why don't you say a word since the day you came? Whatever it is, just tell me. I want to know"

Henry glanced at her. His face was sadder than ever. He could not bear it. He did not want to tell her the truth that was hidden in his chest; Even though he knew that she blames him and he was also guilty. Henry got up from the bed and went to the window. He was determined. He saw the sad face of his wife again. "You don't know, do you?"

Enaya got up. She went a little further. Her sad face turned into apprehension. "I don't know what?"

Henry lowered his head, tears welling up in his eyes. "It's about Peter!"

He raised his head and said what he didn't want to say: "He's dead!"

Enaya took his hand. "It's not possible... I know it's not... Peter is a smart and strong boy; he can't

die so soon. I do not believe!"
"Peter was wounded and boarded the Taimen Highwill on their way to Ventos to Irence. On the way, when a storm comes, the ship is completely destroyed along with all the people inside except for one person. I saw the last survivor of the ship, whom everyone knows, in the sea, who saved me. He told me that my son was on the ship and Taimen Highwill had identified him when he came to the capital. When Peter was found in the sea, he was wounded and unconscious. Think about it! When the storm came, the healthy people inside the ship could not save themselves. How can a wounded and unconscious boy save himself? Peter is dead."
Enaya covered her face with her hands. "I won't believe until I see my son's body, you shouldn't either, okay? you must be strong for me, for the family, for the twins who were counting the moments for your arrival, and for our country. The northerners are on their way; you have to be ready for them."
"My son's lifeless body is drowned in the depths of the sea. I have been trying to find it for the past

few days, but there was nothing else on the surface of the sea or under it except for the broken timbers of the ship. Some say that the bodies of drowned people are immediately eaten by sea sharks... "

Henry could not sleep properly that night. His mind was occupied with the sudden death of his son Peter. He didn't want to talk to anyone until he reached a good situation. The Lords of the court were waiting for him in the Council Tower to discuss the serious matter of the northern rebellion and take all necessary measures. But he had postponed all meetings until the next day. Rylord Grassin, who was very worried about his condition, had provided him with herbal sleep medicine so that the king could sleep peacefully without any distractions.

Seconds, minutes and hours in the night, for him, each of them meant a lifetime. Spending all those seconds, minutes and hours had become too exhausting and difficult. He did not want to see the sinister face of darkness again. The same person who was found on the day of the accident. it had placed a crown made of pure gold on his

head and smiled when it approached him; It was like his birthday again. Henry was looking into its eyes; Unlike himself, who appeared dark, it had bright eyes like the stars in the sky. After wounding Irvyn, the creature approached the Infinity Throne. it climbed the seventh step when it suddenly made a sound that was like breaking. It wanted to ignore it and touch the infinity throne with its finger, but it had lost enough strength to do so. The bird of the darkness eyes was closed as the sword plunged into Irvyn's body. Henry held Irvyn's lifeless body on the ground and listened to his last breaths. Henry saw the creature from behind. There was a sword attached to its back, one piece of which shone in the color of its eyes and the rest was black. The creature was about to run away as fast as it was when Henry threw himself in front of it and together they went at the speed of its feet. Henry could not see his surroundings carefully while walking with the creature. The creature took him out of the ruling Hall, out of the Skyglass, out of Star City, and even out of the Vach. A while after going with the creature, he fainted.

He opened his eyes. The sunlight shone on his golden hair, making it as bright as the sun itself. He had decided to be strong today. The servants had already prepared his breakfast on the table next to his bed. He pulled away the yellow blanket on which the image of a lion was painted. The sunlight hit his eyes and bothered him. He got up to open a curtain next to the window and cover the window. He almost covered the window so that only a small point of the window was left in its and the light from there illuminated the room. Henry was too bored to eat anything. He left the breakfast tray untouched on the table without drinking even a glass of milk. He came out of his room and went to the Council tower. He went up the stairs of the Council tower. When he reached the corridor, Lord Thailus was leaning against the wall with one of the ladies of the palace, talking. Seeing Henry, Lord Thailus separated left her and came to him. "Finally, you have come, Your Highness. We had scheduled appointments in the middle white, but you came earlier than we thought."

"You mean there's no one in the room?" Henry

said.
"Only Lord Lanell."
"Go tell the others as well, including Lord Commander Mid Sir Alest Trini."
"Yes, my King." Lord Thailus bowed.
Lord Thailus left the tower. Henry reached the room at the end. He opened the room door softly. Lord Lanell was turning the pages of the book on the table and reading it. As Henry entered, Lord Lanell quickly closed the book. “My King, I did not know you would come now.”
Henry looked at the closed book. The title was: Kings and Their rule from the Prodigal Son Reagan II of Highwill to the cruel King Iryn VI of Highwill. "You study the Rule of Kings, Lord Lanell." Henry said. "Which one do you think my rule is similar to?"
Both of them sat on the chair and looked at each other. “You are at the beginning of your rule, Your Highness.” Lord Lanell said. “I cannot compare you with the rule of other kings; Because none of them were close to the final day. Your government will face many challenges in the future that none of the kings faced such

challenges in their time, and you know the last one."
"The final day is the last." Henry said. “Tell me, Lord Lanell, why do you read books?”
"At this time, we must use our brains to the fullest. Books and life history of ancient people and their experiences are very useful and necessary to strengthen and raise human intelligence."
Henry added: "At this time, that is, at the time of war, we must use the sword; Because the sword cuts the brain."
"If used wisely, yes."
“My uncle used to tell me you were one of the oldest and most loyal people in Skyglass.” Henry explained. “He always trusted you more than others. He took your advice seriously and acted on it. So, tell me, what should we do with Norris Ritanion?”
Lord Lanell was about to answer Henry when the blind fox entered the room with smiling lips. Rylord Grassin came after him and last, Lord Thailus. "We must have a great feast in honor of the arrival of the king!" The blind fox said.

"If the Northmen don’t destroy it, why not?" Lord Thailus said.
Rylord straightened his back slightly. "We don't have time for this, Your Highness. Norris Ritanion has captured the Bloody Moon Castle and he’s not far from Roarlion. Norris is preparing his men to fight your brother. If the Ronson Azberns army is defeated in Roarlion, everyone will think they are invincible and it won't be difficult for them to conquer a city."
"We can use the skyscraper." Lord Thailus said “Of course, provided that we can pay for it. how much is the royal treasury, Lord Clyve?”
The blind fox was playing with the coins in his pocket. "Not very much, maybe one or two million gold coins of Olyns the Conqueror."
"What's a skyscraper?" Henry asked.
Lord Thailus moved his head forward. “A man in Poorvios, who is said to have been born in the golden soil, made a weapon of war called Skyscraper. With a skyscraper, a hundred people can win a war against ten thousand people. Rordenis bought the skyscraper for ten million gold coins, which wins most of the wars with it.”

Lord Clyve whistled and said in surprise. “Ten million coins! This amount of money can only be paid by Taleskis; As far as I know, the Taleskis never spend their money on the throne."
“They consumed it once and their heir became king.” Rylord Grassin said.
"Not too much," Henry said. “Mid Sairion Talesky only ruled the winter. That was when my uncle's soldiers stayed in the winter. After the winter was over, Mid Sairion Talesky himself abdicated the throne and fled the Vach."
Rylord Grassin emphasized: "Your uncle, the old king, with the help of Norris Ritanion, surrounded the capital; Because of this, the Taleskis were defeated and the true king sat on the throne. Now Norris Ritanion, the king's sword and the wisest man, has rebelled against the true king."
Henry was confused. No one had come up with a logical solution. Everyone was talking about the past. If his uncle was here, he would know what to do. "My lords." said Henry. "if Norris wins the battle against my brother, the capital will not be able to survive under his pressure, and our idle

chatter here will not help the situation."
“What is in your mind?” Lord Lanell asked.
"I want to make sure Roarlion doesn't fall."
“How?” Lord Thailus asked.
"I want to go to Roarlion."
Rylord Grassin looked worried. His face became serious. " You are the future of this country, Your Highness. You can't do that."
Henry answered: "A king who sits on the throne and sees his sword raised against his throne is not a king."
"You can find another sword." Rylord said.
"First we must destroy the previous one. I will not just sit on the throne and see how things go by."
Everyone was looking at him. "No offense, Your Highness." said Lord Thailus. "But what difference do you want to make? "
Henry stood up. "I want to tell him the hidden truth about his son, why I killed him." Maybe this will prevent a battle between the sword and the lion, and I'm the only one who knows that."
Henry watched the sunset from the sword tower where Norris Ritanion lived. The orange-yellow light of the sun was going away. It was getting

dark little by little. As the darkness of the middle white approaches the sun, it disappears. Henry closed his eyes for the darkness of the middle white. He did not want to see the darkness with his eyes open. He preferred it to be closed. For a few minutes, he imagined the western land, which was called the green forest land, with his eyes closed. The trees of the green grove, which were on the west side of the river, cast a shadow with their tall stature. He walked among fallen leaves, tall bushes and broken branches. While walking, he could hear the sound of branches breaking under his feet. He looked for the tree that he had marked when he was a child. Just as he was walking in his imagination, he noticed a squirrel holding a broken walnut in its small claws. The squirrel was standing solemnly in its place and eating the broken walnut. Henry stood by a tree in his imagination. He was staring at it excitedly. A fox approached the squirrel. Henry could see the sly fox, but he couldn't scream in his imagination. His mouth was closed. He quickly ran to warn the squirrel to run away. His eyes were closed when he hit something hard. A voice

came: “Did you forget again? This is the thousandth time I'm telling you, so remember. These white stones of the wall are hidden in the middle white, disappearing and invisible.
The boy, whose head hit the stone wall badly, was black and bruised. Fortunately, the blow was not serious enough to bleed. Henry opened his eyes at the man's voice. He looked out the window. The boy was holding his head. There was a little anger on his face and he was cursing that damn wall. Henry thought to himself: The white stone that disappears in the middle white. Maybe he never thought about it or didn't pay attention to it. But now, it had become so important to him. He left the king's sword tower. The boy, who was the cousin of one of the palace guards had just arrived at Skyglass. His hair was short and black with a hint of brown. His eyes were like golden like Henry’s hair. Henry recognized his face. "Your name must be Sam Heller, Sir Garry Heller's cousin, right?"
"Yes, Your Highness." the boy lowered his head.
"How long have you been here?"
"Seven or eight months, Your Highness." replied

Sam. "The previous king, Richard Azberns, chose me to be by your wife side. "
"King Richard must have had a good reason for it." Henry said.
"what reason?"
"We'll find out later." Henry said, putting his hand on Sam's shoulder.
Tomorrow has come. The Commander Lord Mid Sir Alest Trini, had been summoned in his place. In front of the mirror, Henry was putting on his armor with the help of a servant. The maid fastened his golden belt on which were two small roaring lions beautifully carved in gold. Henry saw himself in the mirror. He waved his hand, the steel bracelet firmly attached to his arm. He could hardly move his arm. He ordered to open them. He didn't want to feel slow when the battle was going on. The maid, immediately released them and opened the steel bracelets". When I heard you were going to leave, I couldn't believe it. But now there is no need to hear, I am watching."
Henry turned his face. The Commander Lord stood alone, just behind him, so as not to be seen in the mirror. The other servant was done. Henry

dismissed him. Not long after, Enaya came with the twins. Seeing their father, the twins jumped towards him. With the heavy armor he was wearing, he bent down to hug them. Enaya was sad, but she didn't show it on her face. She ordered his servant to take the twins after saying goodbye. Mid sir Alest Trini's took Henry's sword from the table and stood ready to attach it to the king's waist. Henry stroked his two sons. He kissed their foreheads. "It's time for me to talk to your mother alone."

Henry stood up. The maid took the twins out. Mid sir Alest Trini's strapped Henry's sword to his belt. "I along with a dozen of the best palace guards, will escort you to Roarlion, and if all goes well, we will return safely."

"No." Henry said.

"With all respect to you, Your Highness, the Commander Lord of the King's Guards take care of the King himself and..."

Henry interrupted. “I want you to protect my family with everyone in the palace. This is the most important thing for me. I lost a son, I don't want the second one too..."

Henry could not complete his sentence. After a pause, he said: "Do you understand what I mean?"
"Yes, my lord," the Commander Lord bowed.
He approached Henry. "We will meet again, my king, in this world!"
After he left, Enaya looked at him. "You didn't have to go by yourself. You always want to leave your family alone."
"In this particular case, I have to go." Henry replied. "The only person who can stop Norris Ritanion from giving up this battle is me. If there is a chance to stop the battle, I must try."
"You can do this in Skyglass, but that doesn't explain why you have to go. You can send a letter or tell the Commander Lord the truth so that he can go and tell Norris Ritanion. I can't take it anymore, I really can't. The twins can't stand being away from their father, neither can I."
Henry knelt for his wife for the second time. "I promise everything will be alright."

Chapter 24
Azberns Roarlion

Roarlion was located by the river on the western side of the forest land. Two lions were carefully and sensitively carved by a stone cutter. Two yellow rubies, the color of which was like pure gold, were placed in the place of the eyes. Lions roared on either side of the entrance gate of Roarlion, standing on a boulder as big as themselves. When the sun shone on the eyes of the lions, the eyes twinkled like the stars in the sky. The wooden gate of the castle was opening in front of Henry and his knights. Henry saw the shadow of the lions on the ground, as the gate opened, the shadows moved like a living creature. When the gate was fully opened, he avoided the shadows and focused on the straight direction. A slender face like the river itself, but on a smaller

scale, black eyes that were as black as the white middle darkness, pure black with two small white dots watching his brother. The proud Ronson Azberns was surrounded by his men. If Enara Azberns hadn't died, John Highwill would have been king and their children would have been the future crown princes. Henry would also succeed his uncle, Richard Azberns, Sword's King, Lord of the Roarlion and Warden of the West, but everything was changed by a tragic event. Enara Azberns was burned alive, John Highwill fled to Ventos. The cruel king also committed suicide and after a hard winter, Richard Azberns became the king. Henry was also named the next heir to the Infinity Throne, and his brother took his place as Lord of the Roarlion and Warden of the West. In the opening moments ahead, he would meet his brother again after many years. That too in the castle where they both grew up together. Ronson Azberns was younger and fresher than him. It had been about four years since he got married for the second time after the death of his first wife. He still hadn't forgiven Henry for missing his wedding. Henry moved his mare

forward so that his brother's proud face could be seen more clearly. He got off the horse. The gate was closed by the castle guards quickly after they entered. Henry knocked Ronson from the bottom to the top. "You are taller than me!!! Like tall trees in the forest!

“What are you doing?" Ronson said. ‘’How many days after you become the king, will you kill your son of the sword? Do you know what it means? That means all of us...”

Henry put his hands on Ronson's shoulders. He looked into her eyes, gave her a smile and held her in his arms. "I'm glad it hasn't started yet" he whispered in his ear.

Ronson slowly separated him. "YET! Those damned people took the bloody moon. Norris Ritanion has gone wild like an animal!"

"And damaged." added Henry. “He does not know what he is doing. He thinks about revenge. He only sees and acts, of course blindly."

"What is your suggestion?"

Henry took a deep breath. "Speaking."

Sir Tarin Terell came forward. He was known as the Last Knight and the Wet Knight. Her hair

was always wet. He himself said that it was due to an illness or a curse that he suffered from since he was a child; it was as if his head was always under water and he was being washed, and his hair became wet as he ran. Some people said: there is a hidden spring on his head that comes out when he walks. Everyone knew him from his always wet hair; even those who were seeing him for the first time. "I am sorry for your loss, Your Highness" Sir Tarin said.

Ronson's mouth was wide open. "I'm really sorry. I had completely forgotten since the northerners came to the forest land to fight. I'm really sorry, Henry. I....."

"It's okay, you don't need to explain." Henry interrupted. "We must put all our attention on the drawn swords."

"I know it's hard to hide that sadness between your eyes and your face." said Sir Tarin. ''You try not to show your sadness in front of others. This will make you great if you don't show yourself weak."

Ronson turned to his men. "Don't you want to keep the king in the courtyard by the gate until

night? Guide them into the great hall."
“Where are you going?” Henry asked.
"I have a few things to attend to. Don't worry, I'll be back by night."
Henry knew all about Roarlion Castle. The way he remembered: the rooms, reception and meeting halls, armory, forge, kitchen, library, defense towers and other things were in their place, but the people inside the castle were different. The passage of time made some of them old, some of them young, and others came from different parts of the Vach. Workers for one of the towers, whose stones had fallen and needed major repairs, had come from the Million Islands, known as the Skull Islands. Sealyond Stone, the king of the Skull Islands, had the best workers and architects; since the Second Alliance between the Vach and the Skull Islands allowed him to have relations with the civilized Vach. Each Lord could employ one of his own, and by treaty between Sealyond Stone and that Lord. He could use one's abilities for a specified period. Ronson Azberns had hired about nine people from Stone Bone Island who were considered the oldest and best

workers. Henry had maintained these relations after King Richard had warned him. As before the kingdom of Azberns, the kings of Highwill had maintained these relationships since the creation of Paradise. During the time of King Derell II of Highwill, these relations had reached their peak so that the Rkings used to send soldiers to help Highwill in the war, and in return for this favor, they should be compensated in their time of need, but during the time of the last King of Highwill, their relationship had become darker. The cruel King had said that the Vach needed no foreign allies. Henry knew history and learned from past events. History made him more alert to take confident steps forward. He had heard the famous sentence of Rylord Grassin "The past is the key to the future". The key was in his hands. Today, tomorrow and until the final day when the future was certain.

He went to his childhood room. His belongings had been removed from the room. His bed was no longer there. In general, the space of the room was empty, except for a few chairs and tables that were piled up irregularly and crookedly. Henry

stepped forward a little. He ran his finger from the wall on the right side of the door to the end. As he drew, the dirt on the wall behind him was falling. He reached the end, removed his finger. He looked at the square frame with a horn hanging in the middle. In his first hunt, he shot a deer with an arrow and attached its horn to his room as a sign of his victory. Henry blew the horn hanging on the wall. The spider web attached to it was torn off. He touched the horn. He still felt the sweetness of that victory deep inside her. An arrow that was hit by a deer, had rushed towards him like a roaring lion and knocked him off his feet. Henry arranged the stacked chairs and tables next to each other in an orderly manner and sat down on the middle chair himself. He thought. He still couldn't believe it in his thoughts. The thing that had entered the ruling hall that night. At first glance, he was surprised to see it. That creature had a human appearance, but his thoughts and behavior showed the opposite. That golden crown that shines on his head. It looked like it was fresh, beautiful, bright, magnificent and well made for his head.

That sword! He could not believe that Irvyn died like that. How should he tell this to Norris? How to convince him that his words are true and based on reality? A fact that only he and Irvyn had seen. The only witness who died by himself. Who will believe the words of his son's killer? Especially Norris Ritanion! Killing Irvyn was wrong, but it was necessary, he said. A fatal mistake that marked the war between the lion and the sword. Henry was confused and looked at the door and the walls to see if there was an answer written on them. He carefully expanded his vision and checked. There was nothing but stone, dirt, and wood and of course deer antlers. He stood up, sighed, and said, "Maybe war is the solution."

He was well received at night. They were all sitting happily next to their king. They had held a party before the battle next to him. They were supposed to fight by his side in the battle. Their spirits had already increased. Henry was sitting in the front row next to Ronson. After eating the appetizers, they brought the main course. The servants placed a plate covered with a silver-colored head of food in front of Henry. "It's your

favorite food." Ronson said.
Henry picked up its silver head: “Deer meat!”
"I still remember!"
Ronson broke a few. The musicians came in. They had iron claws in their hands. They stood in two rows facing each other and played the lions' victory song. "This is too much," said Henry.
Ronson took his drink and said before taking it. “This may be our final day; so, we have to enjoy it."
"My dear brother" Henry smiled.
Lord Skyler slammed his drink on the table. With this blow, half of it fell. "We are glad that we want to fight by the king's side." he said.
"Yes.....yes..." shouted the rest of the lords and knights.
Henry used a fork and knife to cut the roast deer meat into small pieces. The meat was very tough and difficult to cut. He plunged the knife into one of the shrunken pieces. He ate the prepared bite. It tasted sweet like honey, which was even sweeter and tastier than that. The castle cooks had grilled it well. A small layer of flesh stuck between his teeth like a thick string of cotton, and it

bothered him a little when he chewed the next bite. As he drained his drink, the flesh stuck to his teeth was torn away. It finally made him feel at ease. He looked at the crowd. Men young and old who had come from all over the western land to fight for his name against the northern invader. Henry did not want to lose every single one of them in battle. Bad mannered Lord Aremstrong, who looks like a big, strong, four-shouldered cow, like a giant in old stories. The symbol of a headless man was engraved on his hat. House of Aremstrong believed: real death comes to a person when the head is completely separated from the body. At that moment, it really becomes clear that you are dead. Their words were "men without heads, men without honor". At the table next to it, on the fourth chair, sat the plain Lord Felinus. His hair was white, but his face was young. He was called light fox. On the surface, he was a simple-minded person, but it was obvious to Henry. Lord Felinus had arrived after hearing that Henry had come to the castle. He was sure that with the arrival of the king, the situation would go according to his man. Henry saw the next one.

On his chest was a frozen blue heart insignia, that person was Lord Tenzinn. Henry got up from his chair. He signaled; the musicians stopped. The conversation stopped and everyone had their ears sharpened. “My lords, knights, and great men,” said Henry, “I am very glad and grateful that you are assembled here. The later the northerners arrive, the more time they give us to think, plan and prepare. And God knows that I did not want this war. That's why I'm here to stop Norris Ritanion before any serious damage is done. I wish to persuade Norris Ritanion, the Sword’s King, to turn his army northward, so that once more the Five Kingdoms may live in peace as they lived in the days of Richard Azberns."
"Long live the king!" cried Lord Felinus.
The others followed him and said in one voice: "Long live the king... Long live the king..."
Henry asked for silence again. "Unfortunately, if it doesn't go well; as the kings say in the war, bring the final day, for the justice of the king!”
The sunrise in the western land had come earlier and brighter than elsewhere. The heat of the sun had warmed the entire being of the soldiers,

knights, lords and including the king himself. Henry had come with his brother to the armory of Roarlion. The shields he had ordered were almost ready. Henry took one of them. Measure its weight. With the stone added to it, it had doubled its actual weight. Henry gave a shield to every soldier who came. Minutes later, he left this task to the blacksmith himself. “Are you sure?” Ronson asked.
"How much did you make?"
Ronson answered. "It answers almost all infantry soldiers."
"And the rider?"
"They are also being completed and we need a lot of time."
“How much do you think?” Henry asked.
"Half a day, more or less, I don't know. We will try our best to finish it quickly."
“My lord, what if you answer not?” said Sir Tarin Terell.
Henry answered decisively: "It works because I have seen it before. Just finish it."
"Okay," Ronson said.
Henry came out of the armory with Ronson.

They reached the yard when a soldier stopped them. There was a little fear on his face: "The northerners have arrived!"
“How many are there?” Ronson asked.
"I think forty thousand people."
“All of them?” Henry asked.
“No, Your Highness. Norris has kept some of his others stationed in the Bloody Moon Castle and God knows what he has planned for them.”
Henry asked: "He came himself?"
The soldier hesitated a little, swallowed. "Yes, the monster himself has come."
"So, it began..." Ronson said.

Chapter 25
Ritanion
The middle white

Two armies were standing in front of each other.
Lion vs. Sword
The front line of Norris Ritanion's army was made up of men with spears and shields. Unlike the enemy's shields, which were rectangular in shape, their shields were circular in steel with a protrusion. The flag of the northern dynasties, which was taken in the fourth row by the infantry soldiers under the blue sky and sunlight on the air without trembling. The first and last people in the line raised the Ritanion flag, which was bigger than the other flags, with their hands. In the middle of the army, the soldiers opened the way. The war horse was coming forward with its rider who had steel hands. Not only Norris Ritanion’s own armor, but also his horse's armor was made

of pure Stormwin steel, the horse's entire horse's headgear, breastplate, topcoat, and breeches until its hooves were completely covered in battle clothing. The only thing that could be seen about the horse was its eyes. Norris Ritanion was sitting solemnly and calmly on the horse. A soldier ran up behind him to give him his helmet, but Norris refused. Norris held the reins of the horse with his steel hand and shook it gently so that the horse moved slowly through the soldiers, for all to see. The horse arrived in front of the army with its slow movement. He went a few steps ahead of the first row of his soldiers. He held the reins of the horse tightly so that the horse stopped moving. A few minutes later, his son joined him in front of the army. The army of Azberns had its troops ready in front of Roarlion Castle. Big catapults were next to their infantry soldiers. Hard and hard stones were placed on a launcher, which was pure white in color. The men of Azberns had prepared for a possible battle between the lion and the sword. Norris had come to see Fred privately in front of the army. Norris sat restlessly on the horse, motionless, shaking his head. The weather

was very hot. He felt suffocated in his armor. Without armor it was freer and easier, but more dangerous. Therefore, despite the heat he felt, he did not take off that armor because any arrow from a distance could easily pierce his chest, but with his steel armor, he only scratched it. The horsemen of Azberns came forward from the rear of the army, numbering about a thousand people. They stood in the first row with shields in their hands without weapons and their weapons were tied to horses and shouted. Norris was a little surprised when they came in front of the army. The Azberns riders quickly got into battle formation. They were placed in rows of four. Next to each horseman, infantry soldiers were given swords. Norris really wanted to know what was going on. The shouts of the Azberns soldiers doubled. They moved the swords up and down. From the right, the golden-haired cavalryman appeared. In the first row, the cavalry marched to the middle of it. In front of Norris Ritanion, he stood on the other side of the flat ground. Norris looked at him, he knew him. He held the reins of the horse tightly. He was waiting for a reaction

from the golden hair. The archers were ready to shoot their arrows. Norris raised his healthy hand. Henry was staring at him. Norris was still holding his hand up when something strange happened. Henry charged forward on his horse alone, galloping into the middle of the battlefield. Norris signaled the archers to hold hands. "Now is the best time to kill him." Eric approached his father and warned him.

"No, he shouldn't die like this." Norris said.

"So what do you want to do?"

"I'll do what he wants, talking." Norris looked at his son.

Eric was worried. "Maybe it's a trap!"

"No, it's not."

Norris kicked the horse and galloped to Henry's place in the middle of the battlefield. A few steps to reach him, he stopped the horse. The horse wheezed a little when it stopped. Norris wheeled around Henry. "When I first heard, I didn't believe that you came here yourself, but now that I see you, I'm sure. Do you know how I feel?" Norris held the horse. “I’m glad, because I can't wait for a long time to see this moment."

“Norris, listen. There is no need for thousands of innocent people to be killed today for the revenge of one person. We can finish everything right now."
Norris shouted. "Irvyn was not alone! He was the army! My army! And you killed him cowardly."
"I didn't kill Irvyn on purpose." Henry explained. “What I did was wrong, but it was necessary for all of us to survive. If I didn't kill him, you and I wouldn't be standing here."
Norris laughed out of anger. "My son must die so that others can live? What are you talking about? Have you lost your mind?”
"You don't understand it."
"I don't understand." Norris said. “You know, what you did will be paid for by killing your people, but there is another way.”
"What?"
"Your death will solve the problem between us. In this way, thousands of people will not be killed today. That's just you! We will return to the north where we belong."
Norris raised his voice slightly. "And your son will rule in the future. This is the only way."

Henry looked at the reins in his hand. "My death or..." He pointed to the army behind him with his hand and continued: "These soldiers will not bring your son back; they will only increase the enmity between us. I will give you another chance. Take your sword, swear loyalty to me. I also forgive all the things you have done so far out of ignorance. And you will return to your position as the king's sword, my sword, so that once more Ritanion and Azberns will be united, as before."

This time, Norris laughed mockingly. "Swear to the man who took my son from me? You are crazy! A mad king!"

"I really don't want to kill you and your people, I really don't." Henry said.

"You can try."

Henry turned the horse around and said from behind: "See you in the middle white, Norris..."

He held the horse for a moment and said the last word: "Ritanion."

Norris was sitting on a chair behind the army in the tent. He had listened to all the lords that the war would begin in the middle white and that the

war drums would be sounded a few minutes before. Norris was looking at the pieces on the map in the middle of the table. The pieces were lined up like his own army. With his steel hand, he picked up the nut for Ritanions, which had the image of a sword carved on it; Just as he was flipping the nut, Eric entered the tent. Norris noticed Eric's presence when he heard his voice.
"Father, what are you thinking?"
"To my sword."
Eric sat down in the chair. "Yeah, I guess so. What happens next?"
"What next?"
Eric put his hand on the table. "After the battle."
"It depends."
Eric moved one of the pieces on the map and asked, "For what?"
"Win or lose."
"If we win, then what?"
Norris got up. "What do you think? What did the Azberns do after they drove the Taleskis out of the capital? They ruled, so we will rule."
"What if we lose?"
Norris showed Eric the bead he was holding. "If a

sword is placed in front of a thousand lions, it will not be afraid, it will not panic, it will not run away, it will not scream, it will not fail. Instead, it will kill all of them alone. Ritanions are swords, because they never fail. This is the law of their life. When you ignore this rule, you always lose and no matter how many times you try. In the end, death will come to you."

"What if what we thought didn't happen? What if we really fail? What if..."

"We're not going to fail." Norris interrupted.

Adgar stormed into the tent. "My lord, King Henry has played the war drum, and his soldiers have taken their own special battle formation."

"Get ready, it's time." Norris told his son. "As I said, we will act."

"Yes, father." Eric answered curtly.

Norris rode his armored horse to the front line of the corps to issue the necessary orders for the attack. The sound of heavy drums and war horns sounded. The battlefield was heated by the sunlight like fire, which increased the flames of war. Norris ordered his archers to be ready the sounding arrows. He pulled his sword out of its

sheath. He raised his sword as a sign, with his steel hand holding the reins of the horse. He waited until the time was right to give the signal to the archers. The middle white had not dawned, but should he wait until the middle white? Henry's cavalry soldiers stood in front of him with authority. He wanted to destroy them without delay. So, he started the battle before the middle white came. He swung his steel sword down. Thousands of loud shots were fired. They hit the ground with one yard from the front cavalry of the army. The arrows made a loud screeching sound like the sound of great trumpets as they landed. The riders in front screamed when they heard the sound. They had covered their ears and were crazy because of the loudness of the sound. Their horses had stopped. With the jolt they took, the riders threw themselves on the ground. The riders fell on the ground; their eyes were closed. They could not bear to hear the voices anymore. The sounds got louder and louder from the moment the arrows landed; as if it had just begun. Some of them were bleeding from their ears. The sound had torn their eardrums. There was

nothing left until the middle white. Norris issued his second order. Northern knights with swords, spears, axes and maces in their hands rushed towards them on the battlefield on fresh horses. Seven hundred riders on giant horses whose commander was Lord Saron Richmond. Lord Richmond's silver beard reached his chest. Clean and neat, they swayed in the warm wind when they galloped. It didn't take long for the riders to reach the soldiers lying on the ground, who were covering their ears from the loud and frightening sound of the arrow. They hit the enemy's heart with the opportunity. As they passed through them with their horses, they greeted them with their sharp swords. Norris had come ahead of his remaining soldiers to get a close-up view of the battle scene. One after another, the soldiers of Azberns were killed without defense because they could not defend themselves against the voice and the sword that were mixed together. The spearman on the horse rode the spear towards one of the target enemies. A spear hit one of them in the head and the poor soldier was relieved by the loud noise. The voices had already reached their

end. Another rider tore the side of another with a sword. Blood red glowed like fire under the sunlight. One of the soldiers of Azberns, finally relieved of the cursed voice, saw a giant swordsman twice as long as his own sword. He panicked and his mouth was open. The rider galloped towards him with a great sword. When he reached him, the soldier of Azberns didn't understand anything anymore because his head was severed. The rider was holding his blood-soaked sword and making a strange sound, which suddenly got choked in his throat. His horse's leg was cut off and he fell to the ground. His head hit the hard ground, but it rolled, and hitting his head on the ground could not make him die so easily. He was stronger than these words. As he fell to the ground, his sword was released from his hand. He looked for him in the middle of the battle. The battle was filled with so much fighting that survival was impossible. There was a fierce battle on every side, and it was difficult to find anything in between. He searched the ground well. He took a few steps among the fresh corpses on the ground. His head was down when he

noticed a shadow in front of him. The man with the spear was standing in front of him. He pulled towards her to scare her. The man got scared and went back. The spearman carefully saw the lips of his enemy. He thought to himself: Northerners even use their teeth in war. Those scary bloody lips calmed down. A sharp blade entered his body from behind. The spearman saw the sharp tip of the sword sticking out of his stomach. A powerful man whose sword was embedded in his body. He finally found his sword. His sword had gone into his body. Return. The enemy was standing behind him. Seeing him, the enemy let go of the sword and went back a little. He pulled out the sword with all his might. He was about to attack him when the man with the spear hit him in the back of the head, which came out of his eye. The wounded man fell to his knees, a spear stuck in his eye. He was still breathing. The soldier of Azberns faced him with a smile. He thought he was done. The sword was still in his hand. He lowered his head and suddenly cut the legs of the soldier of Azberns with his sword. The man fell to the ground moaning. His smile turned into a cry.

Another soldier intervened. He finished off the kneeling man with a final blow with his sword so that he would not injure anyone else.
Norris had waited restlessly in his place. Henry hadn't reacted to their attack yet, why? What did he want to do? His riders were eaten in the front row. It was in these thoughts that the warning of the coming of the white middle began. A cloak of darkness was coming from afar. He passed over the soldiers engaged in the war. He continued his way and went to other lands to make it dark there as well. With the coming of the middle white darkness, the battle had stopped. They all stood together silently. The sharp swords no longer collided until the darkness disappeared because no one saw anything to do anything. A few minutes were provided for the soldiers of both sides to rest. Norris had run out of patience. It was difficult for him to wait any longer. He cursed the darkness of the middle white to end quickly. Those few minutes ended like all the minutes of his life. The middle white with its usual whiteness had erased the large and heavy shadows on the ground. The fiery heat of the sun had dissipated

and made the air a little cooler. The whole of soldier of Azberns's army, except the vanguard, had all disappeared. Only the castle of Roarlion could be seen. Norris rode his horse a little further to see better. No, they really disappeared. Can't believe how that is possible? How did they enter the castle in a few minutes? Not one, not a hundred, not a thousand, but the whole army had gone. This would take at least hours. Norris opened and closed his eyes to see if he had seen something wrong, but there was no way. His men were looking forward like him, dumbfounded. He was convinced that the army had disappeared. The front riders with their horses were looking ahead in surprise. They dismounted from their horses. The soldiers of Azberns who were left among them took care of it to the last person, until they were completely killed. There was no one else, except for the corpses on the ground, who walked among them in a parade of honor. They raised their weapons to the sky and shouted; it was as if they were winning the battle, but Norris thought otherwise. Norris wanted to come to their place with his horse, but on the way,

something distracted him and distracted him from his work. A knocking sound was heard from behind him; it was even more terrifying than the sound of arrows. The Ritanion soldiers, both on foot and on horseback, were thrown in an unconscious direction. Norris was shocked to see that scene. The circular stone that was thrown from the Azberns catapult was invisible. When the big stone hit the soldiers, it turned blood red and its shape appeared. Norris galloped the horse backwards instead of forwards. Other stones were thrown one after another. The army was disbanded. The soldiers could not see where it was thrown and where it would hit. They were running away in a panic. Norris came to one of the stones thrown on the ground, which had turned red. He got off his horse, bent down and touched the circular stone. The stone was covered in a white coating, camouflaging it from the real world to humans. Norris cut off a piece of it. The original appearance of the stone became visible to him. Norris carefully observed the red stone in his hand; it was as if the blood had been spilled on a glass and it was seen like a stain on a stone, which

was quickly removed by touching it. He said under his breath: "Damn bastard!!!"
He dropped the stone on the ground and got up. Soldiers fell to the ground in front of Norris. From their side, an invisible spirit was killing them without hesitation with a visible sword. One of the soldiers was lucky, the blade of the sword hit the shield he was holding, and he was not seriously injured. The lucky man saw the invisible spirit from behind. It was the spirit of two horsemen of Azberns, the one in front was holding a large shield like a wall with one hand and the other hand to control the reins of the horse, and the one behind him was using two swords as much as he could. The soldier of Ritanion was stunned by them. He thought to himself, how did they make that invisible shield? The soldier threw his visible shield on the ground. He found a spear on the ground and picked it up. He threw the spear at the leg of their horse. The horse tripped, lost its balance and fell to the ground. The soldier in front of the shield was released from his hand and he was thrown to the other side. His face appeared from the front, and

he could no longer hide himself. The next person, holding two swords, was killed by a sudden impact on the ground by the person who caused it to fall. After killing him, the soldier of Ritanion removed their invisible shield and wanted to kill the next one. He took the shield in front of him. He went to the owner of the shield who was lying on the ground. The fallen man felt fear, and as he approached, his fear doubled. He was pulling himself back on the ground with his hands. The invisible shield went away. He saw the smile of the enemy standing in front of him. A shield was thrown over him. As he removed the shield to reveal himself, he died with a sudden sword thrust to his heart. The riders of Azberns had hit the heart of the opposing army with invisible shields and massacred the confused soldiers of Norris. Norris was fighting invisible spirits on one side. He was waving his sword in the air; without knowing who he is hitting. Eric and Adgar were out of sight in the battle, and he couldn't see them. The battlefield had peaked in the middle white light. Norris looked at his soldiers dying breathlessly with invisible swords from the

enemy. Norris was overwhelmed at that moment. When he came to himself, he realized that he fell off the horse, but how? It happened once. He was struggling in the dirt and blood on the ground. When he hit the ground, his steel hand was torn off. The sword was also thrown in the other direction. Norris was about to collect himself when the second blow hit him. The blade of the sword hit his chest, causing a deep wound. Blood was oozing out. Norris fell to the white sky. He thought he was done. Henry was winning, but he must not fail, never. The soldier bravely stood over him to end his life. Norris saw the thirst to kill in his eyes. Not a second passed that those eyes fell on his own eyes. After dying, the soldier of Azberns rolled over him motionless. Norris was lifting his dead body from him with his healthy hand. Eric had killed that soldier by throwing a spear. He ran to his father. He looked worried. Norris saw his son's face blurred. He was in pain from the wound, but the real pain was when he saw Irvyn's lifeless body. He got strength with his memory and forgot the pain. He took the hand extended by his son and stood up. "Father, we lost

badly," Eric explained. “The soldiers do not know what they are fighting. They just held the swords like toys and remained motionless. Those who move, it is not because they are brave; rather, it is from the terror that Henry has thrown among them.”

"Henry used the middle white to hide his army from our sight," Norris said. ‘’Their shields are covered with white stones to make them invisible.’’

"If it continues like this, we will lose all our people."

"Oh my god, look at Adgar!" Eric wondered.

Adgar was trapped on the left side between twenty soldiers of Azberns with swords drawn at him from front and rear and could not do anything. He could only breathe; of course, with their permission. If he retreated, the sharp swords prepared for him would pierce his body from behind. If he went forward, the blade of the sword would enter his heart. The soldiers of Azberns warned him to drop his weapon, but Adgar still held the sword firmly in his hand. He looked at them with hatred in his eyes. Wheeled,

he could feel the sharp blades around him very well as they approached. He knew that a miracle was not going to happen to him for the third time. He finally gave up. He dropped his sword. "They didn't kill him, why?" said Eric as he watched her surrender.

His father answered: "They want to take him hostage. Hurry up, we have to go."

Both were going back from the battlefield. Screams and screams filled their ears. The dead faces of his soldiers made his revenge thousandfold. Eric was walking in front of him to make way for him. He would kill the enemy he faced if he could, but he did not engage himself in fighting; At least he would have wounded it so that it wouldn't come back and slow them down. After killing the enemy, Eric looked behind him. His father had fainted and fell on the ground. Eric went to him. "Father.....father..."

Norris didn't answer, but he was still breathing. Eric picked him up and yelled: "Back off.....back off...back off..."

Lord Kallphen Flame came to them on horseback. His face was covered with blood stains and

wounds. The war had tired him out of breath. He dismounted and after a long breath said: "We have failed."
"Tell the others to retreat and go to the Bloody Moon Castle where our men are." Eric ordered.
With the help of Lord Kallphen, Eric put himself and his father on his horse. "Move, before all our men are slaughtered." Lord Kallphen was hesitating as Eric said.
Eric kept his father as far away from the battlefield as possible. The others quickly pulled themselves out of the battlefield with the command to retreat and ran away by dropping their weapons. Eric hears the screams of the Azberns as they flee. Their cry was of victory over the enemy, which made Eric angrier and angrier every moment. With the trick played by their king, they had easily won the battle. By a river, Norris fell from his horse. Eric held the horse until he reached his father's position. The riders next to him, who were eight people, stopped. Eric, worried and angry, jumped off the horse and grabbed his father. The wound had deepened. Norris had lost a lot of blood. “Go to the Bloody

Moon Castle and bring doctor Rust.” Eric ordered to one of the dismounted riders beside him. “He knows how to stop the bleeding forever."
"Yes, my lord." the man bowed.
"Hurry!"
The man got on his horse and set off. It didn't take long before it got far away from them and disappeared in the dust of the soil. Eric tore a cloth from his clothes and tied it over the wound. His entire body trembles with intense stress. He was in tears and crying. A soft voice came from his father: "I'm still alive, thank God!"
"Yes, father” Eric said with a tearful face. “You are alive. You can't leave me."
"I'm so tired, it's time to rest." Norris said. “The eternal rest.”
"Don't say that Father." Eric held his hand over the wound.
Norris gave a small laugh that made him cough. "I wanted to kill Henry myself, but I don't have that kind of power anymore and I won't get it."
"When all this is over, I swear Henry will burn alive in the fire."
"These are the last moments of my life, tell the

others to go." Norris said calmly. “I want to talk to you alone.”
Eric dismissed the riders to speak with his father alone. With the little strength left in his body, Norris opened his eyes with great difficulty. "Eric, my son, listen."
"Yes, father."
Norris continued: "What I am about to tell you is very important; so be careful that you will hear it once."
“No, father. You are not going to die. I won’t let thay happen. I....."
"Just listen," Norris raised his voice. “Sandroy Ritanion, our ancestor has hidden a treasure under the soil on the side of the black spear. Go to the place where the thirty spears are placed on the ground at one yard from each other. When the middle white light hits them, the head of one of the spears turns white, which is not visible from a distance, and you must be close to it to notice it. Under that spear is the hidden treasure of our ancestors. Sandroy Ritanion believed that we should use that treasure on the final day, but today is my final day. I can't take revenge for

Irvyn. You are my sword of death, and you must do it. Promise me that you will do this."
"Okay, I promise I will." Eric said.
"Ritter Mars knows about this matter, he can guide you. Find the treasure and destroy them all."
"What's the treasure?" Eric asked.
Norris Ritanion closed his eyes; He could no longer breathe. Eric whispered: "What's the treasure?"

Chapter Final
The Worker
We work

It was dark. The sun had not yet risen. Tomelryos stood beside his brother by the seashore. He felt cold. Cold mornings began in seven Eyes. It was mild until the middle white and cooler at night. The early days of summer were as cold as winter and had left their mark until today. The fifth month of summer, the month of Reen, had arrived. Tomelryos had waited, but they had not yet appeared and were late. Kaylryos grumbled, wanting to convince his brother. “Tom let's not worry about them. They are always the same. There is no accounting for their promises."
The tide of the sea, which had become a little rough, wet the sand under the feet of Tom and his brother. The ship was waiting and moving when it saw the sunlight. Tom had his hands under his

arms. He thought to himself: If they don't come by daylight, I will leave. I don't care anymore. Can't wait another month for the ship to come again. Summer is ending, winter is coming and when it comes, the situation will be more difficult for me and my family. His father was no longer able to work. His brothers, who stayed in White Rock, helped him with the work.

Kaylryos was shorter, more immature and two years younger than him. Tom was big, square-shouldered with messy black hair that blew in the wind. He was wearing a big cloak and so was his brother. Tom could hear footsteps quickly approaching. Kaylryos was a little happy. “Look, the fools are finally here. If we stay off the ship because of them, I know what to do..."

"No matter. The more people we have, the better. Our expenses will be less. If it wasn't for the expenses, I wouldn't have waited a moment."

Four people who were running behind them reached them. Seeing them, Tom said their names: "veenen, Sims, Delfino, Ogan, etc."

He paused for a moment. He looked over and asked: “So where is Strom? Why didn't he come?"

Ogan, the bald boy, who apparently had his hair cut before coming, replied: "His father did not let him go, imprisoned him inside the house and said: My son is not going anywhere."
"Why?" Tom wondered.
"Because he didn't allow it! How do I know? Let's go or the ship will leave."
Tom didn't care about Strom. They all moved towards the ship that was anchored along the shore. According to Kaylryos, it was the first and largest ship he had ever seen. When he got close to it, he could see its majesty. He touched the hull of the ship. He was excited and said to Tom: "I'm finally getting on a ship, can you believe it, brother?"
"Yes, and you're going to do other things, after all." Tom answered. feeling sorry for his friend Strom that he could not join them. “Of course, difficult and difficult tasks, my dear brother.”
The six boys climbed the fallen stairs on the beach and boarded the ship. When they reached the deck of the ship, their way was blocked by the assistant captain who was a hot-tempered and bad-tempered man with a three-cornered hat on

his head. "You wait here for the captain to come and decide for himself whether you really deserve to stay on this ship or not? If you didn't have..."
He touched the short his mustache. "If you didn't have it, you'd go back the same way you came to your ruined house that you call home."
Disappointed that his friend Strom didn't come, Tom became angry with the way the co-captain was treating them. He took two steps forward. "Really?"
The man pointed the stick in his left hand at Tom. "Who do you think you are?"
"Me? You didn't say it right! We! We are the new passengers of this ship, and we want..."
The captain appeared suddenly, lowered his baton to Tom. "Do you know how things are going? Of course, you pay the fee after you return from the Skull Islands. But a question arises. How do I know that you will return alive to pay your debt? So, you have to work before reaching the Skull Islands; at least if you don't come back, I won't feel bad for your return."
The captain laughed with that round face that covered the surrounding black hair. He ordered

his men to give them buckets of water to clean the ship's deck. "Are we new arrivals?" Tom complained. “Our people usually go to the islands by your ship for work. Tell me, which of them haven't paid their debts yet? My father and I once went to the islands on your ship and when we returned, we paid for everything. Don’t you remember? No one is as smart as the people of White Rock; especially us. Be sure that one of your debts will be paid before I die. Even now, we don't expect you to give us one of those first-class cabins. We just go and sit in a corner of the ship, that's all!"

"You know what?" The captain said. “I am the master of this damned ship; since those damned two people I know are from the White Rock side..."

"Who said they were from White Rock?"

"Don't deny it, I know they are spoiled. Ever since they took my money and didn't pay, experience has taught me not to trust any White Rock. I won't let you down this time, I'll let you go to the Skull Islands with my ship and work for your families. From the next time you board my

ship, you must pay the fee first, understand?”
Tom stared into the captain's eyes. "Why work when we are paid first and last?"
"If you don't like it, you can get off now and come on the next ship. Let me tell you, the next ship won't arrive for another two months, and if it does, its captain is not as smart as I am to wait. He takes the money before boarding. Since I know that none of you have a single silver coin, wow... you have to spend the winter hungry."
He looked at the other five people. "As you wish!"
Tom took the bucket from his assistant. "Your ship and your rules but remember, when we come back, we don't clean up."
"Who knows who is alive and who is dead until then" The captain said. "but this moment is very important."
The rest took the wooden poles along with the bucket. Tom came with Kaylryos to the middle of the ship's deck. Tom put a wooden stick in a bucket of water to get it wet. After getting wet, it was drawn slowly on the dull brown wood. His brother had started from the other side beside him. It was still dark; the sun had not risen. The

ship was standing still, the captain had not yet signaled to depart. Tom walked to his brother's place. It was time to dry it. He told his brother: "He doesn't want you to do it fast, just go back and forth slowly, so that you don't get tired. Hold your hand every ten minutes and get tired, there is no rush."
"What if they see us standing and not working?"
"They don't care. Now, they are busy with rich travelers and their last concern is our work; it may not be their last worry. I know them well."
"Last time you saw it, it was seven years ago, maybe they changed," Kaylryos said.
"People like them never change."
He hit his brother's wooden with himself. He laughed. "Slow down...slow down....no rush!!!"
Tom looked at the other four people on the other side of the ship who were huddled together. They were standing and talking among themselves. A moment later, the assistant captain came to their place and warned them to do their job properly. He stood above them to make his words come true. Hours later, in the sunlight, they were done. They sat together. They were sweating a lot from

exhaustion. "This was preliminary work," Kaylryos said while he was holding the wooden in his hand “The main work hasn't started yet!"
Tom watched the blue sky on a bright day. It was pulled under his chin. He noticed that the ship's crew was taking cleaning supplies from them and brought them in a basket of bread. The ship's crew, who was an elderly man, gave each of them one and warned: "This is your only meal; So, you have to satisfy yourself with this until you reach your destination."
Tom took a small bite of the bread in his hand. He looked at his brother and thought. His father had given him the responsibility of Kaylryos to take care of him. His father had sent them together to work in the Skull Islands and return to White Rock, home, after the summer was over. They had to work hard until the end of the summer, which was three months. Nothing special should have happened to Kaylryos until he returned home; otherwise, his father would have blamed him. They were supposed to come in the early days of summer, but they were delayed due to problems, so they left for the trip today. Sims, a

boy whose face was full of freckles and yellow seeds, said: "You guys heard! Is Panos in the Skull Islands? That fool left earlier than all of us."
"He's probably raised a lot of money by now." Veenen said.
"I'm sure he's eating a legless animal now." Ogan laughed.
"What's the matter with the legless animal?" Tom asked.
Sims and Ogan laughed together as Sims said: “You don't know what? Everyone else knows that they have a branch in their hand.”
"Well, we don't live on a branch. The news does not reach us. Our house is very far from a branch."
"Alright, I don't want you to die without hearing." Sims explained. “The case goes back to a few years ago. I think when Panos first went alone to the islands to work. It means that he saw fish for the first time in his life!!! One day, his employer brought him fish for breakfast. He sees that the fish he takes to grill has no legs. He asks the employer: Did you eat the legs of this animal by yourself? The employer says: How are you,

son?”
Sims couldn't stop laughing anymore. Instead of saying the next sentence, he laughed. The others laughed after hearing the story. "That is nothing." said Delfino. “Do you know who is Tilton?”
The others said: "Yes, yes, we know. The same frowning man who is at war with everyone."
"The one who acted the most disastrously in the first days of his work. On the first day of work, the foreman orders him to make a fire to heat the food. Tilton goes and goes and goes until the white sun. It has been a long time since the white sun came back. The foreman asks him: Where did you go to make a fire? Are you lost? He answers I searched the whole island, but I did not find fire. The foreman looks at him and says: What does that mean? Were you supposed to find it? Tilton tells him: Yes, we must find it. He asks him: Where did you come from? Why are you talking like this? Have you ever seen a fire? He answers: The first and last time he saw fire was when lightning struck a tree and the tree caught fire. Until then, he thought that the fire came from the sky.”

The others laughed again when Tom said: "You have never seen the depth of the disaster."
Veenen said: "It is very difficult for someone who sees something unexpected for the first time to understand it. When we see something new, we also give an unexpected reaction that makes others laugh, but we should not refer to it as mockery; rather, we should use it as a lesson and teach others. Tom, let it go too. do not start."
"What I am saying is not to make fun of others; rather, it is an interesting memory and truth that happened before."
"Tom, convince yourself all you want, but that doesn't mean you didn't make fun of that person," Veenen advised again.
Sims grumbled. "Here comes the advice again. There is still a lot of time left to reach the islands, let him explain so we can laugh first; At least open our hearts."
"What I'm saying is, it's not my fault, it's not your fault, it's not anyone else's fault, it's his own fault for what he's doing." Tom said.
Veenen finally agreed: "Alright, whatever you're comfortable with. Tell them, Tom, to relieve

yourself of this burden which weighs heavily on your shoulders.”
"I certainly will, dear Veenen." smiled Tom. “Where do I start, now?”
Ogan told him: "From the beginning."
"Very well, there is a place in Poorvios that you all heard about and probably went too. It is called the golden soil, where if a mother gives birth to her child there, her child will have high intelligence when he grows up in the future. It means that a person becomes clever. Now I don't know if it is true or not? How is it or not? It doesn't matter now. Apparently, someone from White Rock, whose name I don't want to mention, had found out about this important and, as he said, necessary issue. That person's wife was pregnant, and he wanted to take his wife to the golden soil. He told everyone: My child is going to be the smartest, most influential and most successful person in White Rock and Poorvios. We thought he was joking, but no!!! He was very serious. A month before the birth of his child, he moved to the golden soil. He put his wife on a donkey and took her through the heights and

lowlands of White Rock, where an ordinary person can hardly walk."
Tom paused. "Say the rest." Sims said.
"Well, to summarize the rest, his wife was riding a donkey. After they went a short distance, his wife fell off the donkey...and lost her child. When he came back and wanted to bury his child in the cemetery, we gathered at the grave. We were left to laugh or cry. The man who was standing next to him said: Well, who is wise enough to do such a thing and make his wife ride a donkey on this winding road. Well, if your child is not smart, something special will happen. We saw that he got nervous. His face turned red and he wanted to hit that man when several people held him tightly. Later, his wife became pregnant again. The same man said to him: “Do you want your child to be born smart again?”
They all laughed out loud for the third time inside the ship. "You've made it at last, Tom." Veenen said.
Kaylryos got up, he wanted to go to the other side of the ship. Tom noticed and was about to stop him when Veenen grabbed his hand. "Let

him enjoy his first trip away from home a little."
"I just don't want..."
"There will be no problem. It's all five or six yards away from us."
Tom sat down restlessly. The fatigue of working with laughter was gone. He leaned his head against the hull of the ship. He moved a little to make his head a little better. He stretched his legs to rest. He closed his warm eyes. Before going to sleep, he wished to have a good dream. He fell asleep thinking about a good dream. He saw himself in front of a big castle. Deep down, he felt that he has known that castle for thousands of years. The castle was in the final stages of its construction. In the dream, his mind and thoughts were in his own hands, but the authority was taken from him. It was as if he was working on the castle when his hands were moving the stones and his thoughts were asking why. He thought: I know I'm in a dream, but why isn't I in full control? Why can't I quit? Is my destiny to work in sleep and wakefulness? He was thinking in his sleep. He woke up with a sound that he felt from the outside world. "Wake up, we're here,"

Kaylryos was saying.
Tom picked himself up. The effects of sleep remained in his eyes. He wanted to sleep more, but he couldn't. He could not remember what he had dreamed. He thought for a while, but he didn't remember anything. He didn't care about sleep and dreams. They went forward with his brother to see. The ship passed between small and large islands that existed in Tom's view to the infinity of the island. Some of the islands are uninhabited, some of them were settled by the Stones. Their ship was going to New Sun Island, where most of the workers came from. In the new sun, the employers and architects chose the workers and took them to whatever direction their work was. “Are we going to work together again?” Kaylryos asked.
"I do not know. It depends."
"On what?"
Tom explained the work schedule to his brother: "On New Sun Island, there is a large square called the Worker's Square. Workers sit around it for work so that employers come there and take them to work. If we are lucky enough that the

employer needs two people, we can work together. If we are not, I will still do the same thing."
"How were you when you and dad got together?"
Tom described the past time. When he came there for the first time with his father. "At that time, we were working for a man named Bykern. He was a very good person, a good person. He gave us breakfast, lunch, dinner and even a place to sleep for free. His morals and behavior were excellent. At that time, my father and I worked very easily. If he is still in and has a job, we will go to his place. If not, we have to go to Worker's square."
After traveling to its destination, the ship reached New Sun Island. Tom and the others made their way to the steps spread out on the beach to get off the ship. Before reaching the stairs, the captain stopped them. "If you don't come and I don't pay, I won't give anyone a free ride from White Rock again. Did you all understand?"
They all nodded their heads to confirm his words.
"We don't forget." Tom said.
"Okay, now you can go and be careful."
"Care for what?" Veenen asked.

"The king of the islands has changed."
"So what?" Tom said.
"He is not like the previous king, he is different. His name is Sealyond Stone, called the Genocide. Do you know why?"
“Why?” Kaylryos swallowed.
"Because he killed his own father and son."
"We have nothing to do with the King of the Isles," said Tom to the others.
The captain laughed: "But it's your job."
"I think it's time for us to go." Tom said.
He took his brother's hand and led him down the stairs. The others followed him down the stairs.
"What do we do now?" Kaylryos asked.
Veenen, who was next to him, added: "Did we always come here, what were we doing?"
"We work." Tom replied.

***

The End

In the ancient books, it is said that the history of the Ice Age was written by the Purple Eyed Hero, the first heir to the Infinity Sword.

The Ice Age I

The Ice Age I began at night.
The ice covered the whole world; from north to south, from east to west, from the underground to the surface of the earth and up to the sky up to the stars. This icy world was slowly melted by the heat of the sun. The melted ices turned into seas and lands, and along with them, they followed fantastic and incredible creatures. These creatures came to life on earth after the ice melted.
These creatures such as ice and fire dragons, giant dinosaurs, large sea mammoths, pteranodon, Dunkleosteus, Mosasaure, Ammonites, Platybelodon, Smilodon, direwolf, Liopleurodon, Deinosuchus, Platecarpus, many eyeless birds, invisible insects, there were horse crocodiles, horned lions, etc.

All these extraordinary creatures were under the dominion of dragons, and their king was a half-breed dragon named Fice, who ruled over them. This dragon could bring all the creatures of the earth to their knees in the sky just by flying. From the breath of this dragon, ice and burning cold-fire and burning heat came out. This dragon had hot and cold skin that changed depending on the seasons. In the summer, the warm skin went inside, and the cold skin came out so that it does not feel hot under the sun. He even protected all creatures from the heat of the sun with his cold breath. His entire body was white with fiery red lines, which represented his two inner powers. With a very large body and a long life that reaches almost several centuries. On the head of the king's dragon, which was the strongest and biggest of all, there was a gold crown so that all creatures would recognize their new king by seeing the golden crown that was given to him by the previous dragon.

1_237

Rycy, the first dragon of Fice_ Rycy the night light

The rule of the first dragon Fice began in the dark of night, lighting up the sky like day with its fire and ice breaths. This dragon made his crown from night fire.

237_402

Black eye Barberan

Barberan were the only dragon that when he closed his eyes, the world was plunged into darkness.

402_498

Terraymens, King of Winter

Terraymens was accidentally the first dragon to bring winter to the middle white.

498_532

Napierneil a wing

After winning the battle with one of the dragons, he lost one of his wings. Losing his wing deprived him of the ability to fly and he could no longer go up into the sky. His rule on the earth was very short and he was finally overthrown by another dragon.

532_721

Golden tooth Paxlyce

Instead of his broken teeth, he was made of pure

gold, which distinguished him from other kings.
721_1003
Crazy Vadorvald
The wildest and craziest dragon of Fice who killed many creatures for fun; even his own kind were disgusted by him.
1003_1214
Olymrys the sea_ conqueror of the seas
Olymrys extended his kingdom into the seas. It could swim among the marine creatures in the sea and stay there for a long time. Due to his strong interest in the sea, he spent about a third of his life there. His wings turned sky blue when he came out of the water, which made him look beautiful.
1214_1517
Young Noxrigan
The youngest dragon to wear the king's crown.
1890_1517
Bearded Kensityn
Kensityn had a longer and unstable rule than the previous kings, until finally other creatures rebelled against the dragons and imprisoned them in the underground.
The revolution of creatures

After the overthrow of the kingdom of Fice dragons who went to underground prisons, independent governments were formed in every corner; from all kinds of powerful and great creatures, they ruled over other weak creatures. In general, seven great kingdoms were formed in forests, seas, deserts, frozen lands, mountains, vast plains, and volcanoes.

Two thousand years later_ the arrival of a new species of dinosaurs called Inusend

Their eggs were kept in the place where the dragons were imprisoned until they hatched. Inusends are such that when they are born, they are old and unlike all creatures, instead of getting old, they get younger day by day. This process reaches a point that makes them eternally young and do not have a natural death. When they attack a side, they equip themselves with black iron ore to become invincible. Inusends conquered the whole world in four centuries and brought the age of terror to the world.

1_75

Elethrous seven horns_ the first horror

Elethrous always sat on top of the biggest

mountain. Each of its branches was connected to one of the natural phenomena on earth. When there was a rebellion, he would destroy the rebellion by shaking his horn.
75_133
Somrix thunder and lightning
Millions of ants carried him to the top of the seven-horned Elethrous Mountain. When he reached the top of the mountain, lightning struck Elethrous's horns and incapacitated him, Somrix threw him down the mountain with all his might.
133_140
Timamoon_ moon of the day
During the longest night, which lasted for about seven years, he shone like the sun during the day.
140_184
Unlucky Velesry_ the last horror
Velesry, the last king of the dinosaurs, was killed by the fastest dire wolf on earth.
New reign with a new species
1_9
Fast Winarl
The fastest creature in the world that fed its speed from the middle white.

9_38
White Leventlym_ Rumors of the Extinction of Dragons
The White Dire wolf faced the extinction of dragons during his rule. He changed their prison from underground to another place so that their animal species would not be destroyed, but he was surprised by the Smilodons while doing the work.
1_4
Smart Ruffernin
The first and last king of the Smilodon type who was able to rule for four years.
The final rule of different species will be destroyed by the impact of the meteorite on the earth's surface. All the creatures were confused and most importantly doomed until they did the last thing possible, freeing the dragons of Fice. The last possible thing they did was to save them. 17 dragons flew across the sky and destroyed the remaining effects of the meteorite with their breath.
The rebirth of dragons on earth and their flight in the sky marked a new age. They ruled the earth again as before; of course, this time together.

The last rule of the dragons

After the passing of many years, the final day of Ice Age 1 came.

On the final day, the white star Tiser hit the ground. All creatures, including the Fice dragons, which were the most powerful species on Earth, were destroyed by a shower of ice, but the Tiser Star kept the last remnants of the Ice Age I, the three Fice dragon eggs, intact underground.

The Ice Age II

The Ice Age II beginning the middle white.
After the destruction of the creatures of the first Ice age by the white ice Tiser star, the Ice Age II was formed in a cold storm with the arrival of large ice jellyfish, and new creatures were born from it, which are called the descendants of the ice storm.
- Human-like but not human
- They have a long life.
- Instead of hair, there are sharp icy tentacles on their heads.
- Purple eyes
- Most of them have skin as white as snow with blue blood flowing under it.
- They have their own special language, which is called the snow language; It is slow but cold like snowfall.
- They have very high intelligence.
- They have their own culture and civilization that they can pass on to their future generations.

- feeding them Airise which means air and ice.
- An eight-pointed star appears on their foreheads in the middle white.
- Every three hundred years when the ice rain started mildly, the born of the ice storm put their born children inside the ice crystal and these crystals were located in the hall of the ice heart. The rain of ice continued until the ice from the sky came close to the sun. In this ice rain, some of the natives of the ice storm died, but their children survived inside the ice crystal and grew up inside the crystal until the ice on the ground melted. And their descendants remain on the earth and are called Buricen.
- The source of Icyn, meta Icyn and dark Icyn, three main substances of the ice world

Ice storm natives have thousands of different species, and eight are known.

Blue tentacle architect's species_ Oyseren

Their blue tentacles are a sign of their great knowledge. They are born constructive. Their children are born earlier than other species. Using ice, houses, castles, palaces, tall buildings, high walls, roads, underground bridges, above ground

and on water, fields and even war tools are made. Their biggest structure is the ice star. It is said that the snow language was invented by them. Their symbol is the ice hammer and their land is the first snowfall.

The type of red bodies_ Reterm

Sons of the Sun, who are known as the first species born of Ice Storm. Reterm, the inhabitants of the land of the sun, use their hot bodies to melt ice and make the ice melt faster than usual. They even have the power to get their children out of the ice crystal early when it rains, but this harms their nature and weakens the Buricen cycle. There are only those who can make fire with their hands. Heat source of Zimp allows them to survive freezing rain, but they aren't the only ones that survive freezing rain. Their symbol is the sun.

Ice-bearing species_ Wykin

The Wykins can make Buricen, but they have limitations for this, they strictly refrain from doing so and use natural Buricen. They are known to bring ice in the middle white and to some extent they can control the ice in Buricen.

The lonely king is their castle. Wykins are known as celestial warriors. Their symbol is a sharp three-headed ice.

Type of sword handle_ Sworin

Instead of their right hand, there is a steel sword that distinguishes them from other species. When the Sworins put their children in the crystal, they put a sword next to their right hand, and after Buricen ends, the sword connects with the child's hand and their hand becomes a sword. They are also called intra-crystal fighters. They claim to learn to fight under the ice rain inside the crystal in the dream world. They belong to the land of one-handed swords and their symbol is a sword.

Night giant species_ Galatona

The icy mountains of their land are a scary and always dark place, a forbidden area for other species. They rest in the cave during the day and middle white, but they stay awake at night to hunt other weaker species. They are the only species that put their children under the cave, which is called the second safe house, inside the big crystals, and after Buricen, they themselves are destroyed, but their children survive. Their

symbol is the black moon.
Type of riders_ Oct
Brysky, an ice bird, only lets them ride. The Octs can control the sky with their ice bird and easily dominate some species. In the middle white, Brysky's speed increases and he can fly three times him normal speed. After Buricen is over, the newly born offspring of the Octs search for Brysky's egg all over the world. They do not have a specific land and are constantly migrating. They are called guests of the land. Their symbol is an ice Brysky.
Marine species_ Lican
There are many ice creatures in the sea, of which Licans are the most powerful. Their weapon is a big trumpet that when it is blown, the whole sea comes alive, and this happens when Buricen is on the verge of coming or war. Their honor and masculinity are well known. Although the sea is their first home, they can also live on land. Their symbol is water and soil.
Kind of children of the mother_ Zorsteryn
It is rumored that they built the Ice Heart Hall and lived there since the birth of the Ice World.

They are responsible for protecting the ice crystals, and their own children grow up without going inside the ice crystal, and they become the future guardians of the hall. They are the only species that have the science and knowledge to bring the children of other species out of the crystal safely after Buricen. Their species is very rare because most of them are destroyed during frost to protect the ice crystals. Most of the ice species have a good relationship with the Zorsteryns for the survival of their generation. Their symbol is an ice crystal.

Species rule over the Ice Heart hall

Originally, the source of Icyn was located throughout the ice world, and all species used it during the time of Buricen to keep their offspring alive when the ice fell. Gradually, the Icyns of the regions were destroyed due to the subsequent Buricens, which started more intense and dangerous. The mother's children collected the remaining the Icyns and after the Ice Heart Hall was built, they brought the Icyns there and protected it as guards of the hall. Other ice species would bring their children to the hall under the

supervision of Zorsteryn when the Buricen occurred, and after the Buricen was over, their grown children would return to their lands. The Zorsteryn managed to control the Hall of the Ice Heart for five Buricen.

During the time of Buricen V, there was a battle between Sworin's tribe and Reterm's tribe, which was over meta Icyn. The one who used this substance in Buricen, he or his child did not need to go into the crystal to survive. This battle lasted two Buricen, which was finally dragged to the point where the material of meta Icyn disappeared, and the species of Sworin was found guilty because it was the culprit of this battle and the disappearance of meta Icyn, and a Buricen was deprived of the source of Icyn, and many of them during the rain were executed by ice.

Three unknown allied species from the west of the Motherland attacked the Zorsteryns to capture the Hall of the Ice Heart and took the hall during the frost and imprisoned the children of the guardians under the hall and informed all the different species. Those who want to use the Icyn resource for their children must follow their rules,

otherwise the doors of the hall will be closed to them forever. And if any species wants to encroach on this area, they will be severely suppressed. They wanted to use the children of other species as soldiers, slaves or servants for themselves. But their rule over the Hall of the Ice Heart did not last even a single Buricen, when the Brysky Riders destroyed their species and freed the Zorsteryns so that they could protect the Hall again, but this time under their protection, in a way that no other species would march to capture the Hall, and peace would prevail did not destroy.

The ice-bringing species went to the Syky kingdom to conquer other lands. He wanted to conquer all the ice lands and revive the ice heart hall in his land. He conquered one land after another using the Buricen he made. When he encountered the Octs, he offered to fight hand-to-hand, and they accepted this offer. In this fight, they had made an agreement that both sides should not use their own power, but when Syky was defeated during the fight, he used his power and killed the king of the Octs. In order to avenge

their king, the Octs mounted him on Brysky and threw him from the sky to the earth so that no Wykin would have the courage to face them. The son of Syky also returned to their land with his men after their defeat. A century later in Buricen, when the ice of the world melted, the night giants destroyed all the eggs of the ice birds and imprisoned them in a cave where they lived, so that the Oct could not access it. The Octs became weaker and weaker after losing Brysky; So that they no longer had any control over the Ice Heart Hall and migrated to the Land of the Sun.

Prince of Buricen

In this Buricen, it is said that when they wanted to take the children out of the ice crystals, only one child came out alive, and they named him Prince Buricen. He was of the ice-bringing species, who descended from the octet race from his mother. Some people said that he is a Syky descendant of their cheating king. He traveled alone to the icy mountains and went to the habitat of the species of night giants. He united them with himself and released the Brysky imprisoned in the cave and returned to the castle

of the lonely king with the night giants. He obtained the three main ingredients of Icyn and using them and riding on Brysky, he conquered the entire ice land. And he called himself the ice king. With the help of Blue Tentacle Architects, he built the Ice Star Castle and placed the Ice Heart Hall at its center. He ruled as a king over all species until the final day.

1_Final Day

In the name of the ice king

Prince of Buricen

The eldest son of Ice Storm

The king of all the ice regions of the world

Cold is his shield, snow is his weapon, and ice is his power

Protector of three sources

Brysky, a rider and bringer of ice in the middle white

The Ice King ruling

Buricen 4

All the ice crystals break together and new children are born together.

Buricen 7

The ice king reaches the peak of his power, which

can multiply the speed of melting ice crystals.
Buricen 21
During the melting of the ice on the earth, the ice king goes to a far a way place from the ice star castle, where his abilities are weakened, and the crystals do not break after the ice melts. The children remain in the ice until after twenty-one years the king reaches his original power, but when the ice crystals break, the children that come out of the crystal are much older than usual.
Buricen 22
The population of the Ice Storm natives had dropped too low. The Ice King tries not to make the same mistake again.
Buricen 24
Balance is restored.
Buricen 32
A meteor hits all the crystals. The ice king tries to stop it, which causes him to get hurt and thrown into a corner of the ice world. He hides himself for a while to return to his original strength. At this time, the children who came out want to conquer the ice star and choose a new king, which will form the age of kings throughout the

ice lands. There are wars that last for two centuries. In the Age of Kings, a sea warrior conquers the ice star. The claimants of his rule want to give the kingdom to the children of the ice king. The sea warrior goes to battle with the ice king's children. When he tries to defeat them, the Ice King returns with his New Species allies and defeats him and takes the Ice Star.

Buricen 38

The Ice King chooses two successors for some Buricen from among his new children that came out of the crystals, and he himself goes to a long sleep in the room he made under the ice star.

Buricen 39

During the ruling of his successors, which Buricen was in the final moments of, all of the ice crystals instead of breaking and spawning are all destroyed, and the crystals split into thousands of pieces.

Buricen 40

The second successor of the Ice King decides to wake him up when Buricen arrives so that the previous Buricen disaster does not happen. The Ice King ruling again.

Infinity Buricen

It is said that they did not see ice falling from the sky in this time. At the time of Buricen, the Ice King had put the children inside the crystal and was waiting for Buricen to start but there was no ice rain. After several centuries, the children inside the crystal slept the same way without any change as if they were dead. As much as seven Buricen passed, but still there was no news of ice rain. Almost all species became old and some of them became degenerate. The ice king was becoming more broken day by day. It had come to a point that with his special power made Buricen to the children grow up inside the crystal but it was useless. He finally had to use the dark Icyn material to revive the children inside the crystal, who were the last survivors of their generation, but this work had consequences. He managed to bring out the children inside the crystal alive by using the dark Icyn substance. A century later, infinity Buricen ran out and ice fell.

Buricen panic

In this Buricen, some of the children of the Infinity Buricen were transformed into the

Descendants of Terror. In this way, they were never old or destroyed, and no ice weapon worked on them. A great wave of terror arose in the icy lands. The Ice King rose with his allies to fight them. Many ice species lost their lives in this battle. And finally, they were able to imprison them in the land where the ice falls earlier than anywhere else. After the icy rain, they lost their dark power and returned to their icy nature.

The night of Buricen

In this Buricen, the sun and the middle white were hidden from the sky.

The final Buricen

When the children emerged from the broken crystals, the final day began.

On the final day of the Ice Age II, the Tiser Star hit Earth for the second time, bringing an uncontrollable shower of ice upon the ice creatures that even the Ice King could not control or stop with his own strength. As a result, the Ice Destroyer destroyed the ice and destroyed all the ice creatures along with their king.

The Ice Age III

The Ice Age III is began in day.
The rule of the creatures of the Ice Age II ended and the world was reborn. The rule of humans in the Ice Age III was the beginning of everything.
Rencen I
In the book of the Lost Emperors, which is in the Misyn Library, there is a story about the era of the first heir to the Infinity Sword and the birth of the two-faced walkers, which is a famous folk tale.
The first heir to the Infinity Sword_ the Purple Eyed Hero_ known as the first man of the first men
In the popular narrative, it is stated that in the vast land of Hallarytos, the Zinak Empire had placed its capital in the city of Yocit. King Draikan comes to rule from the third dynasty. He wanted to conquer the city of Exara, which was known as the city of the first and the bride of Ventos. At that time, before the lands were divided, Ventos was half of the world, and at the heart of it was

the ancient city of Exara. In Bride of Ventos, the first heir to the Infinity Sword lived with his wife, who was known as the Mother of Beauties. It is said that at that time, the first heir of the Infinity Sword made a vow that he put the sword in a special place so that it would reach his second heir and that he would not use it to live like ordinary people. He took care of many children and educated them and sent them all over the world. The first heir to the Infinity Sword was known as the first man of the first men, even though he was not the first man. When the King Draikan attacks the bride of Ventos, the warden of Exara asks the First Heir for help, but he refuses and does not interfere in this matter. After successive attacks on the city, the fall of the city was certain. All the elders of the city, including the warden of the city, go to the house of the first heir to the infinity sword, and everyone in his house agreed and wanted him to pull out his own sword to destroy the usurper's enemy. He agreed to help them with their frequent insistence and the pact that was made between them. The first heir disarmed all the enemy soldiers with the Infinity

Sword and demanded that no blood should be spilled and we should all live together in peace. The King Draikan agreed and led his army through the city gates into their own land. A few years later, Asor, King Draikan's minister found a substance left over from the Ice Age II and convinced King Draikan that he could use the substance and the dead humans buried in the graveyard near the volcano with zero magic. Bring them back to life so they can fight the first heir. Asor got permission from the king and performed this act on the cursed day. He named this army the army of the two-faced walkers and became known as the King of Eyes. First, he destroyed the King Draikan himself and took control of his kingdom. The army of the two-faced walkers had become uncontrollable, and Asor had become involved in his zero soul magic with the dead soul and had lost his human control. The Eye King attacked the Bride of Ventus with his army. The first heir was able to stop the dead to some extent and it was a difficult task for him to destroy them all. The First Heir's Infinity Sword had the power to tear the lands apart. He

separated a huge part of the land of Ventos, where the two-faced walkers existed, and made a spider's web called Nimisin between the living lands of humans and the dead, so that they would disappear from sight and not interfere in each other's world.

A legendary account quoted by the Mad Master Domingo in the book (I Know Fact or Legend). Many people do not accept this story and refer to it as a legendary joke.

In his book, Domingo calls the first heir a liar and says he hid the truth from us. He has said all this about the ice age to say that the final day happened twice and the third time will happen to humans while the final day has not happened yet and he wants to say that the final day will come after seven centuries of the kingdom of leaves. There is no doubt about the coming of the final day, but he has a difference of opinion with those who came before. According to many quotes from the first men, this kind of story is narrated by a legend that states that in the beginning of the world, there was no ice age at all and the three worlds of beings were separated from each other

by a spider web called Nimisin, and this web was so powerful that He did not let creatures enter each other's world and see each other. When the Infinity Sword was created and the power used to create it was consumed, it tore Nimisin's web and the beings entered each other's world. The earth was lost in the confusion of different creatures and all the world was covered by chaos and injustice. The first heir tried his best to make peace between humans and other creatures, but this peace did not last for a short time. In the meantime, a person named Asor had made a proposal to the first heir about destroying other beings by the dead, which the first heir did not accept and considered this to be interference in the world of the dead and knew that it would have very serious consequences. Asor secretly went to the volcano mountains and poured the dark Icyn substance of the Ice Stormborn world into it. Fire lava fell on the dead who had died in battle with other creatures and they rose from the dead. Their eyes were fiery and their bodies were cold. Asor became one of them and the most powerful of them with the magic he read in the

dark Icyn material. He could see others with his eyes at night through the fire. They say that if there is a fire somewhere, the dead will come there because Asor saw all the lit fires and knew who was there. By the time the first heir found out about this, it was too late and the army of the two-faced walkers had been formed. Under the pretext of destroying the two-faced walkers, he united other creatures with humans, which is called the union of three generations. With this union, he destroyed the two-faced walkers. The pact that the first heir made after destroying the common enemy. It was to give a land to the born of the ice storm and dragons so that they could live away from humans. He separated a land with the power of the infinity sword and named it the middle land, and other creatures went there. He rebuilt Nimisin's web so that the visitors could hide again. The first heir took three dragon eggs from the dragons for this pact they had made and brought the son of the ice king to Ventos as a hostage to live in Ventos as a reminder of their pact to live in peace.

House Highwill

Old roots , New leaves

From the blood of first and ancient men
Derived from the old generation of Ventos Highlord.
The oldest dynasty in the Rencen II
The Highwills consider the founder of the family and the first king of Ventos, the heroic and brave Myllen, to be their legend. In one of the battles, a comet was hitting the earth in the middle of the battle. Myllen held up his own shield against it. The impact of the star was so strong that it threw him into the river. After the battle, he was the only person to come out of the battle alive. Later, they called him Myllen Star shield.
In order to reclaim their old city, the house of Ritanion marched towards the old city of discovery, to which Troylo the explorer first came and called the city of New Light. They wanted to conquer that city which was a relic of Troylo the

explorer. The city of New Light was ruled by the house of Tarais at that time. The house of Tarais had put its syning source in storage and could not use it for a while, and its military power was weak at that time. The house of Tarais asked for help from King Raynor, the king of Ventos at that time, to confront the Ritanions, and King Raynor Highwill agreed to send an army under the command of his brother to them. Edvard Ritanion also went to battle with King Raynor's brother near the Bloody Moon. This battle between the king of the south and the north was called the sword and leaf battle. As the Ritanions were determined to conquer their old city, the battle lasted for a century. The kings of this period of Ventos were called battle kings.

Kings of sword and leaf battle

First King of Battle - King Raynor I

The start of the sword and leaf battle near the Bloody Moon, which lasted for 8 years, after which the war moved towards the City of Light, and Highwill soldiers guarded the city for 3 years as the Ritanion army retreated.

The second king of battle - King Norrin I

During the time of King Norrin I, they thought that the war was over with the retreat of the Ritanions, but the Ritanions sent small groups to set fire to the farms and lands around Irence to take revenge on the house of Highwill make people terrified. These groups were soon destroyed, but the Ritanions used this to keep King Ventos busy defeating them so they could get the Bloody Moon, and the main battle took place inside the Bloody Moon Castle.

The third battle king - King Raynor II

After defeating the Highwill army, the Ritanions finally conquered the City of Light.

The fourth battle king - King Ronin I

Highwill's army was almost weakened. The soldiers had lost the motivation to fight. The Ritanion soldiers had reached the gates of Irence and surrounded it. King Ronin I was one of the weakest kings of Highwill who had accepted defeat and wanted to surrender to the Ritanions, but his brother with his loyal men attacked the heart of the Ritanions army at night and killed their king. The army retreated without King Ritanion.

The fifth king of battle - King Norrin II
The Highwills regained their first military power, and this time the battle was drawn to the Wild Bridge of the North. After the battle, a group of Highwill and Ritanion soldiers called Ritwill joined together, which neither accepted the house of Ritanion nor the house of Highwill.
Sixth Battle King - Raynor III
King of Ventos went directly to war to suppress the Ritwill rebellion and destroy them.
The seventh battle king and the last battle king - Harrel I
Ritwills became stronger and stronger each day; this matter was a concern for the Ritanion and Highville families. For the first time in history, after several decades of conflict between these two families, they finally united to destroy the Ritwills. King Harrel I of Highwill sent his adopted son Alvess Vent, into battle to destroy the Ritwills. After defeating them, Alvess Vent Highwill succeeded King Harrel.
Narratives about Alvess Vent Highwill
The first narration that was narrated from the people.

It was prophesied for the second heir to the Infinity Sword: Whoever conquers the lands of the Vach can obtain the Infinity Sword and use its unique powers. It was said in Vach: The Infinity Sword will be picked up by a peasant who conquers the whole world. Alvess Vent was a vassal of Ventos who was adopted by King Harrel. He was the one who ended the hundred-year war between Highwill and Ritanion with the peace he made between them and destroyed the Ritwills with the help of Daitrios Hall Ritanion. King Harrel nominated him as successor after himself. When the Kingdom of Ventos reached Alvess Vent, allied with Daitrios Hall, the vassals of Hallstreet crossed the Red Sea and conquered all the lands of the Vach, amounting to the 12 Great Kingdoms. After that, he went to Poorvios to make the prophecy come true. Everything changed when he went to the place of the Infinity Sword. He effortlessly lifted the sword that millions of humans had been unable to lift since the time of the first heir. For four days, he used the speed of the sword and explored the whole world from east to west, from north to south and

faraway lands. Alvess Vent also conquered the land of Poorvios with the Infinity Sword and earned the title of Olyns the Conqueror, meaning the conqueror of the world. As the conqueror of Vach and Poorvios, which was his golden rule, he ruled for two years, and later lost Poorvios due to the wars that occurred. After winning the Battle of Time and defeating the Conqueror of Time, he built the Skyglass, the largest and most beautiful palace of the Vach, by the Celestials. Olyns the Conqueror was not the Highwill, but he became the real Highwill of history. Historians call him the third most influential person in the world and the most famous person.

The second narration narrated from the children of Pure

It is said that Alvess Vent was the son of the leader of the Ritwill rebels during the rule of Harrel Highwill, who was kidnapped along with his brother and brought to Ventos. As a teenager, he works for the southern lords in the farmlands around Irence. He was plowing in one of these fields when King Ventos went to visit that field and he liked him. He brings him to Irence with

his brother to serve him as a servant. When he sees his loyalty, honor, intelligence, ability to fight, he adopts Alvess and calls him the first vassal of Highwill. When Alvess Vent reaches adulthood, he defeats the Ritwills with his brother and by teaming up with Daitrios Hall Ritanion. King Harrel appoints him as his successor, which causes much strife in Ventos.

The third narration is narrated from the companion of the heirs

It has been narrated from the companion of Olyns the Conqueror, the second heir of the Infinity Sword that the Infinity Sword passes from the heir to the next heir. To the effect that, the first heir had given the infinity sword to Olyns the Conqueror and had brought him from childhood to Ventos and trained him until he was ready to take it because he knew that the sword would reach Alvess Vent Highwill. It was prophesied about a peasant who would conquer the world. When Olyns the Conqueror came to Poorvios to take the Infinity Sword, he presented him with the first heir to the sword so that he could use its powers to fulfill his duties to the people.

The fourth narration is known as the ice narration, which is narrated by the fans of Master Domingo.

In this narration, it is said that the son of the ice king adopted three orphan boys who had lost their parents. Alvess was the eldest of them, Aremlyn the middle, and Daitrios the youngest. He trained them to bring him closer to his goals when they grow up. He was preparing Alvess to be the second heir to the Infinity Sword and said that he had been prophesied about him. He made Aremlyn the best fighter of his past, present, and future by giving him a book of advanced swordsmanship written on the Infinity Sword. It also made Daitrios the smartest person of his time. He told them: You three brothers will change the world. He kept Alvess and Aremlyn in Ventos, sent Daitrios north. He guided them to obtain all the lands of the Vach. After Alvess got the Infinity Sword, he sent Aremlyn to Middle land (an imaginary land where the creatures of the first and second ice ages are said to live) to conquer it and become the king of Middle land. He helped these three brothers a lot to make him the king of

the world, but everything did not go according to his plans.
Alvess Vent Highwill - Olyns the Conqueror - Conqueror of Conquerors - Vassal of Ventos - Lord of the Seas - Liberator of Light - Father of New Houses - Second Heir of the Infinity Sword - The third most influential person in the world and the most famous among them
- 18 years of the kingdom of Ventos
He was introduced as successor after King Harrel; while the blood children of the king were killed in the war.
- 2 years of golden rule
Alvess Vent Highwill ruled the lands of the civilized Vach and Poorvios as the conqueror of the world for two years, which were called his golden rule.
- 12 years of ruling over 12 kingdoms of civilized Vach lands
After losing the land of Poorvios, he settled on the twelve kingdoms of Vach.
- 8 years of his absence
During his absence Daitrios Hall Ritanion ruled as second conqueror.

Century of the Five Kingdoms
Olyns the Conqueror lost his seven kingdoms of the land of Alanthus and Clanthus in the battle of life, and his children ruled the five kingdoms of the land of Ventos and Hallstreet after him.
1_14
John the First - the first son of Olyns the Conqueror - the Green Knight - the father's hand - the sword of the brothers
Olyns the Conqueror had taken care of his nephew since childhood and had appointed him as his first son and successor during the rule of Ventos.
14_46
Alvess II - the only son of King John I
46_67
Rayce I - the second son of King Alvess II
King Alvess II's first son was on a sick bed when he announced that Rayce would succeed him.
67_75
John II - First son of King Rayce I - Pseudo Green Knight - Blind King
He had a very high skill in one-handed swordsmanship. In one of the tournaments of the

kingdom, he lost his eyes and became known as the blind king.
75_93
Iryn I - the second son of King Rayce I
King John II handed over the government to his brother after eight years of ruling over five kingdoms.
93_103
Derell I - son of King John II - son of the blind king
It was prophesied that during the rule of Derell I, who was known as the son of the blind king, the world would plunge into absolute darkness, which was considered the first Final Day warning. On the seventh anniversary of his rule countless crows rumored to have come from behind Mountain of conqueror, gathered together in the sky so that there was no distance between them, and hid the light of the sun for a century. King Derell I had ordered to shoot the crows with arrows, but the arrows never reached them.
A century of sunless kings
103_143
Alvess the Third - the fourth son of King Derell

the First - the Night King
143_158
John III - son of King Alvess III - King of Light
During the rule of John III, the crows were separated from each other by a small amount, which caused the rays of sunlight to shine on the earth in a spot and create a little light, which was called quasi-day.
158_170
Rayce II - nephew of King John III
Because King John III had no son, he declared his brother's son, who was also his son-in-law, as his successor.
170_187
John IV - grandson of King John III and son of King Rayce II - King without a middle white
During his rule, the crows had also hidden the middle white for three years.
187_197
William I - the beloved son of King John IV - the handsome king - the first poet king of the House of Highwill
King William I wrote long odes about the darkness of the day, which his servant and

companion recorded in a book. He was poetically wounded while hunting and died a few days later.
197_204
Iryn II - the second son of King William I
At the end of Iryn II's rule, the ravens disappeared from the sky and the sun reappeared in the sky. The day on which this event happened was called the beginning day or the first day.
A century of brothers' rule
Olyns the Conqueror had predicted that in the future my five children would rule together. Some people of that time believed that Olyns made this prediction about his five exceptional children, but historical commentators know his prediction about the rule of the brothers.
204_242
Rayce III - the ten-year-old son of King Iryn II - the child king
When Rayce III was ten years old, his father, King Iryn II, is said to have been killed by one of the courtiers by giving him poison, but his killer was never found. Historians consider this a premeditated terror. After his murder, Rayce III ascended the throne with the support of his queen

mother.
242_270
Liam I - son of King Rayce III - sitting king
He was killed like his father; except that when he was sitting on the infinity throne and talking, one of the knights suddenly came forward and plunged his sword into his heart. King Liam died sitting on the throne of infinity. After the death of the king, it was rumored that the second wife of King Iryn II killed the child king by giving him poison and that the sitting king was killed by his sworn knight with a sword in front of all the courtiers.
270_275
Alvess IV - Fourth son of King Liam I - First King of the brothers' rule - Knight King
According to the will left by King Liam I: this is how my five children should rule together. He had determined the successors and the period of their rule. This will be only given to the next successor so that the next king could rightfully sit on the throne.
275_278
Aiston I - Second son of King Liam I - Second

King of the brothers' rule - King of Winter
278_281
William II - the fifth son of King Liam II - the third king of the brothers' rule - the king of justice
281_289
Edward I - the third son of King Liam II - the fourth king of the brothers' rule - the Farmer King
289_291
Yolreen I - the first son of King Liam II - the fifth king and the end of the rule of the brothers - King Patience
291_297
Iryn III - son of King Yolreen I
During the rule of Iryn III, the house Talesky was at the height of its power when they attacked the capital. They were able to conquer the city and Sairion Talesky was able to rule for seven days. King Iryn III received a deep wound during the battle and died after a year of illness.
297_306
Liam II - son of King Iryn III
Seven lights of darkness came to Star City from

seven corners of the world and took the city under its shadow. King Liam II ordered to evacuate Star City and build a wall around it and build seven towers on seven sides of the Black Light. Those who guarded this tower were called the guards of the seven darknesses. The center of the guard tower was seven shields Castle. The king made his capital Irence.

A century of kings without a capital

306_326

Alvess V - the first son of King Liam II

During the rule of Alvess V, Star City became known as the City of Ghosts.

326_333

Reagan I - third son of King Liam II and half-brother of King Alvess V

It is mentioned in history that his mother was from the house of Retigan .

333_378

John V - the last son of Reagan I - King of the Seven Lights

He decides to go inside the ghost city or Star City of the previous capital. When he goes inside with his guards, the gates are closed. After a few years,

he returns alone. He never told anyone about what happened to him in the city. After his return, he called himself the King of the Seven Lights.

378_392

William III, son of King John V

During his time, the guardians of the Seven Darkness revolt and open the gates of the ghost city and people go inside the city.

392_415

Reagan II - The Lost Son of King William III - The Dead Child - The Son of the Ghost Town - The Conqueror's Son

It was rumored that the son of King William III, when the gates of the ghost town were opened, went into the city with the people and was killed, but he had taken Poorvios out of the land. During his rule, the seven dark lights disappeared from Ghost City, and Star City was once again chosen as the capital of the old and new. According to the agreement and contract he made with Regulus Rking, his close friend, the newly created land of Paradise became one of the allies of the Vach, which was called the Union of the Two Lands.

White century
In this century, the Star City became the capital again.
415_433
Derell II - the middle son of King Reagan II
During his time, there was a battle between the house of Highwill and Rking, which became known as the Battle of the Princes.
433_436
Iryn IV - The illegitimate son of King Reagan II - The Mad King
King Iryn IV claimed to be the third heir to the Sword of Infinity.
436_455
Rayce IV - son of King Derell II
King Rayce IV ended the battle of the princes and again preserved the covenant of union.
455_512
John VI - son of King Rayce IV
Highwill's greatest rulership
Century of disease
512_526
Alvess VI - grandson of King John VI
At the end of Alvess VI's rule, an epidemic called

C-Coynbes I began. During his rule, very few people were affected by this disease.
526_544
Vegan I - the second son of King Alvess VI
For a short period of time, the disease of C-Coynbes I took very few people to death, and the second wave of the disease, called C-Coynbes II, started from the west side of Poorvios and gradually reached Vach.
544_570
John VII - the scientist son of King Vegan I - the first scientist and alchemist king of Highwill
The disease had covered almost the entire of Vach and reached Skyglass as well. King John VII ordered the city gates to be closed and no one allowed to enter the city to find a cure for the disease. Many people were infected during this period and died immediately after a few days. He built a great hall in Skyglass to take and care for the patients of the court. By reading many books, the king found the cause of the disease, but he did not find a way to cure it, and finally he got infected in one of his experiments and died.
570_591

Iryn V - Healthy son of King John VII - the first physician king of Highwill

When he was a child, his father had sent him to medical school to learn medicine so that he could find a cure for this disease when he grows up. King Iryn V fell ill twice, but he got better after being quarantined, but the disease had taken away one of his sisters and two brothers. On the 10th anniversary of his rule, there was a third wave of disease that killed many people from all over the Vach. He ordered that all infected people should be quarantined in their homes and not come out so that this disease does not spread to others, and anyone who disobeyed this law was punished by death. The era of the third wave was called the era of silence, when many things happened.

591_608

Kentt I - son of King Iryn V

King Kentt I collected all the notes and researches of his father and with the help of the doctors of Paradise, he found a cure for this disease, which was a very slow process that after nine years, the number of patients with this disease decreased, which was the fourth wave and the last wave.

Century of the Final Day
In this century, it was prophesied that with the destruction of the kingdom of the house of Highwill, the final day will come to the five kingdoms.
The same rules of the three kings of Highwill
608_630
Rayce V - son of King Kentt I
In the middle of Rayce V's rule, no one was suffering from C-Coynbes disease, and sick people were sent to Black Island, which was one of the Skull Islands, to be treated. For this, the house of Highwill made an agreement with the house of Stone, who were the king of the islands, which was called the Second Union.
630_652
Derell III - the clever son of King Rayce the Fifth - the wise man - the Lord of Judgment
652_674
John VIII - the third son of King Derell III
The end of the same rule that three kings ruled for twenty-two years.
674_705
Alvess VII- the first son of King John VIII- the

one-year-old king
After one year of his rule, King Alvess VII fell ill and was laid to rest. People gave him the title of the one-year king, which if he died, would be the shortest rule of the first King of Highwill. But he survived and ruled for another thirty years.
705_730
Iryn VI - the only son of King Alvess VII - the cruel king - the genocidal king
The end of Highwill's rule
Revolution
It was rumored that if the last Highwill died, Mountain of Conqueror would collapse into the Red Sea, which would open the passage and the two-faced walkers would destroy the world before final day came. King Iryn VI executed his only son for treason and told everyone that he was the last of the Highwill. He ordered his grandson John to be found and killed after his missing father was killed, but John had fled to Ventos. They brought news to the king that he was also dead. The king did the last thing and brought the revolution to the five kingdoms.
The flag of the house of Highwill is a green leaf

on a yellow background.
_King Iryn VI of Highwill - was sitting on the infinity throne and committed suicide by eating poison.
_King IrynVI's wife - Queen Roona, his cousin's daughter, died of a high fever while pregnant.
Their children
_Prince Rayce - the heir to the infinity throne, was publicly executed by his father for treason.
_Prince Renn was a one-year-old child who died due to illness.
_Princess Mailyn - King Iryn VI had named his unborn child who he assumed was a girl - unborn she died in her mother's womb.
_Prince Rayce's wife - Lady Nathrynder of Storm hug in Old Poorvios, has drowned in the Pearl Sea.
Their only child
_John - called the last Highwill, Lord of Irence, Warden of the South, Star Shield of Ventos
_His first wife - Lady Enara of the House of Azberns, was burned alive by the people in a house on the Street of Ice by the order of King Iryn VI.

_His second wife - Lady Niria from the house of Hartwood, died due to an illness.
Their children
_Sir Rayce (Ray) - first son, called the Green Knight, heir of Irence
_Wyveen - their only daughter
_Taimen - the third son, called the last leaf
_His third wife - Lady Kaylin of the house of Lest
Their child
_William - the second son, called the adventurous boy

House Ritanion

The Sword does not speak

New men
Clever and tall
Kings of the North
Their fame ranges from Troylo the discoverer, Nepp the builder, to Daitrios, the second the conqueror. The new men who migrated from the Poorvios side to the civilized Vach.
The first sword - the sword of unity
Troylo the explorer
Troylo was the first to cross the Spirit Isles and reach the lands of the Vach. Before him, many people tried to get themselves out of the spirit islands, but when they entered there, they were forever confused and even lost their way home. In ancient times, the Spirit Islands were known as a one-way trip with no return. People of that time used to say: the one who can leave the spirit islands behind can discover new worlds. Troylo

traveled there three times to discover the world behind the Spirit Islands. In his first trip that he went by ship; like many previous humans, he was stuck there. It took him almost two years to find his way back home, and as a result, out of all the people on his ship, only two returned with a parrot. He had been careless for several years when a man came to him and said that he came from the other side of the Spirit Islands. Troylo decided to travel to the world behind the Spirit Islands for the second time. Of course, this time with a man who came from there. His ship was caught in the stormiest day in his memory and everyone on board, including himself, put out to sea from the storm-ravaged ship and headed for the nearest island. They were on the island for a year to repair the ship. Troylo wanted to continue his way, but his people opposed him and considered this trip pointless and fruitless. Troylo was convinced that there was nothing behind the Spirit Islands; because the islands of the Spirit are the end of the world, which is twisted around itself like a spiral. In any direction they go, they will return to their first point, and everything that

others say about it is a lie. Troylo had to leave the islands with them and return home with difficulty as before. For the third time, he went to the Spirit islands with his horse. He had gathered all the experiences of his previous two trips, and he set out on this trip with a clear vision. This time he would mark all the islands he passed with reverse fire. From every island he had marked, he shot an arrow towards it. The ashes that he had previously thrown on the island wrapped themselves around the fiery arrow and created a dazzling light up to the sky for a few moments. With this sign, he knows that he has crossed this island. So, he passed the islands one after another in the same way until he opened a passage to the new world that only he could go to. For the first time in his life, he stepped into newly discovered lands by himself.

The second sword - the sword of justice

Nepp manufacturer

Nepp Ritanion wanted to rebuild their family castle and build a living environment in the basement, when they dug the ground, they noticed a black substance which the castle of

Ritanion was made on a mountain of that. They named this material black gold. Black gold was used to make the swords of Swordwin and Stormwin, which was the best pure steel. Most of the fame of Napp Ritanion was due to the justice he established among the people. The northerners consider him the most righteous man in the history of Ritanion.

The third sword - the sword of death

Daitrios Hall Ritanion - Second Conqueror - God of Politics - Sword of Olyns the Conqueror

He was called the sword of death because he pointed his sword at any person. He could easily destroy him. Daitrios, like Olyns conqueror, was a vassal who had been adopted by the house of Ritanion . He is considered the smartest person of Rencen II. He chose the position of Sword's King for himself to serve him as the second most powerful person in the world after Olyns the Conqueror during the Golden Rule. He ruled as the second conqueror of the Twelve Kingdoms of Vach for eight years during the absence of Olyns the Conqueror. During his time, the house of Ritanion had reached its peak of prosperity.

The House of Ritanion flag is three horizontal swords on a blue-sky background.
_Norris Ritanion - called Norris One Handed, Lord of Sword's Nepp, Warden of the North, King's Sword
_His wife - Lady Sandriana, his cousin's daughter, was very excited about the news of her little daughter's death, and her heart stopped.
Their children
_Irvyn - the first son, callled the Sword of the unity, the heir of Sword's Nepp
_Larissa - eldest daughter, wife of Lord Robert Ney
_They haven't given him a name - the second son, called the dead child, when he was born, his eyes were closed and he wasn't breathing. Norris believed that he was stillborn.
_Wayne - the third son, called the Sword of Justice, has fled to Poorvios.
_Abelia - the little girl, was missing in night woods as a child and was rumored to have been killed by wild animals, but her body was never found.
_Eric - The fourth son, called the Sword of

Death, the master of the ship
His brothers
-Taylian - died due to illness.
_His wife - Lady walina from the house of Taranai, died of illness like her husband.
Their child
_Adgar - their only son
-Gilldas - his younger brother - was killed in the tournament of the kingdom.

House Tarais

We are the First

They claim to be the first humans to live in the land of Hallstreet, which was part of the Civilized Vach. But the historical books narrate different stories about them, the strongest of which states that they migrated to this land from the direction of the Morning Sea and settled in an area that was empty of inhabitants. They named the area where they lived as the first land.

Identify the first power of the celestial gift

Syn was an ordinary farmer who lived with his family in the Tarais tribe. The head of the tribe banished him and his family from the tribe to the cold neighbor because of the unjust accusations that people made against him. The cold neighbor was a cold region where living conditions were unsuitable and very difficult. In the winter, Syn lost two of his children due to the cold weather, lack of proper shelter and heavy snow and rain.

The land he used to farm on didn't produce any crops and was considered a dead land. One night when he was on his way back home, a fiery light was approaching towards his land which caught his attention. The fiery light lit up the entire world for a few seconds when it hit his ground; so that no one noticed where the light hit. When Syn went towards that fiery light, he noticed that the ground was holed like a pit and that light had gone into it. He filled the pit with dirt so that no one would notice. So, no problem would happen to him, and he did not care about it. After three years, a red plant grew from his land, which later became known as red gold. This red gold used to produce in 20 to 25 days continuously. To harvest this crop, which he named Feran, every year at the promised time, Syn hired workers to collect all of it from the ground. This plant was used especially for medicine, food consumption and coloring, and it was called the king of the spices of the world. Syn became one of the great traders by trading Feran to other regions. After eight years, he was able to buy all the lands of the Tarais tribe and founded the house of Tarais. He

called the fiery light a celestial gift.
Identify the second power of the celestial gift
During the time of King Esvend Tarais, a scientist named Nepos mixed some of the celestial gift material with steel and made a source. With that source which he could make a fiery arrow capable of destroying a castle or a city. Making this resource, which he called Syning, took a long time and was a sensitive and precise work. It required a lot of calculations to launch the arrow and determine its location, the secrets of which he had given to King Esvend Tarais; If he gives him a little celestial gift. Nepos made a fiery arrow and shot it towards the small-eyed castle. The castle suddenly exploded after being hit by an arrow, and many people were killed in this explosion, and it left devastating effects after that. So that the use of fiery arrow was prohibited.
Identify the third power of the celestial gift
During the time of Olyns the conquering house of Tarais had made a device using the celestial gift material, which could be used to communicate over a distance of a few miles or even more. This tool, especially known as EarthVoice, transmitted

people's voices to each other; So that a person could hear another person's voice from several miles and talk to him. King Bell Tarais had ordered that tools be placed in special places around the world so that they could use it for espionage. He had designed a big map of the world in EarthVoice Hall, and by walking on a point of it, he could talk to the person who was there or hear people's voices. From that map, he could find out about all the news of the world and understand the plans of others. Daitrios Hall Ritanion with his intelligence found out about this and did not let EarthVoice be placed in the capital and warned Olyns the Conqueror that he should stop their spying. Olyns the Conqueror sent Aremlyn Midnyter, called the final day, to conquer the celestial Gift and kill their king. Bell Tarais Olyns the Conqueror threatened to raze Twelve Stars (the former palace of Star City during the Golden Rule) with a fiery arrow. He needed six days to prepare the fiery arrow, and within three days Aremlyn Midnyter captured the celestial gift and killed King Bell Tarais for treason and espionage. The son of King Bell

Tarais also knelt to Olyns the Conqueror. What the historians say is that Olyns the Conqueror destroyed all the ErthVoices of Vach and part of Poorvios to cut off their communication.
The house of Tarais is identifying the fourth celestial gift power.
During the rule of King John VIII of Highwill, the house of Tarais regained independence.
The flag of the house of Tarais is a fiery crown on a blue background.
1_17
King Oliver I - the first independent king of the house of Tarais - the king of money
It was rumored that King Oliver Tarais had bought the seal of recognition of the independent kingdom of House Tarais by giving money to John VIII of Highwill.
17_44
King Brayan I - First son of King Oliver I - King of Ice Island
During the rule of Brayan I, the house of Tarais bought the ice island located around the north of Poorvios.
44_63

King Owen I - the second twin son of King Brayan I - known as the Twin King
King Owen's twin brother was supposed to be the heir to the throne of Ryfire when he died due to illness.
63
King Edy I - only son of King Owen I
King of all the first men and the first land
Feransyn Star
Chosen to protect the celestial gift
Sworn by the blood of Syn farmer, the first true Tarais and the true book
Supporter of scientists
And the rightful king of Ryfire
_His first wife - the former queen _ Queen Diana of the house of Ferans, the queen retainer
Their child
_Princess Sorian - the heir to the Ryfire throne
_His second wife - the new queen, Dytoria of the house of Tarais, his cousin's granddaughter
His only brother
_Temsyn - his younger brother, the Lord of the City of Light
Lords of the red carpet

_Lord Arenyer - called the man with a thousand faces, Poorvios merchant, Lord of Feran
_Lord Jack Tyns - Lord of Communications, Lord of the Hall of EarthVoice
_Lord Cloeis Yourg - Scientist, Lord Source of Sinning and preparation of fiery arrow
_Lord Asen Fir - was born in the golden soil, Scientist, philosopher and astronomer, called quasi Daitrios Hall Ritanion, Man of the Century, Lord Identification
_Lord Temsyn Tarais - Lord of the City of Light

House Azberns

We are Unique

Golden hair and good looking
The fourth exceptional son of Olyns the Conqueror - Lioneil Ness Azberns - called the Two-headed Lion - a unique son
He was born with golden hair and blind. The people of the capital mocked that the son of Olyns the Conqueror was born defective. During his childhood, one of the servants accidentally poured boiling water on his face. His face was badly burned and the stains remained on his face. When he grew up, he fought very well without his eyes. He could easily predict the opponent's movements with his sense of hearing. In one of his fights, he was seriously injured and sick. Olyns the conqueror took him to the place of the doctor who lived on top of the last mountain. Because of his hatred for Olyns the conqueror, the doctor poisoned his son with a medicine that would keep

him alive and breathing, but he would never be able to get up. Olyns the conqueror did not surrender. He put him on the bed in his own room. He dipped the Infinity Sword in his own blood. He held the sword above her head, the drops of blood turned purple as they flowed down her forehead and fell like debris on her head. Olyns the conqueror left two lions in his room to guard him. He prayed for his health from morning to night. On the fourth day, Lioneil Ness came out of the room with two lions; What Olyns the Conqueror and the others saw was unbelievable. He could see for the first time in his life. All the injuries on his face were completely gone. He had become the most handsome boy in the 12 kingdoms, with the great lords of the Vach asking for their daughter's hand in marriage. Lioneil Ness was called the most unique son of Olyns the Conqueror.

The house of Evengers ruled as kings west of Hallstreet for centuries until they bowed to the Olyns the Conqueror. The unique Lioneil Ness, at the behest of his father, chose the daughter of Lord Dalun Evengers as his wife.

Lord Dalun Evengers swore allegiance to Lioneil Ness Azberns, Warden of the West for his father in Twelve Stars.
Azberns's flag is two roaring golden lion on a red background.
_King Richard Azberns - called the old king
_His wife - Queen Heldiss of the house of Neel, never woke up in the cold winter.
Their children
_Princess Enaya - Enara's twin, Henry's wife of the House of Azberns
_Princess Enara - twin of Enaya, first wife of John Highwill, people burned her in a house on the street of living ice by order of the king.
His brothers and sisters
-Dedra - his older sister, died a natural death.
_Her husband - Lord Pelagios Skyler
Their children
_Jack - eldest son, heir to Sky stone
_Kadenza - the eldest daughter
_Martin - the second son
-His younger brother – Relward, has died due to illness.
_His wife - Lady Sathya, his cousin's daughter,

was murdered by unknown people.
Their children
-Henry - the eldest son, the heir to the infinity throne
_His wife - Enaya is his cousin's daughter
Their children
_Prince Peter
_Prince Felios - the twin of Selios
_Prince Selios - the twin of Felios
-Ronson - second son, Lord of Roarlion, Warden of the West
_His first wife - Lady Arika from the house of Nareg, died during childbirth.
Their child
_Arika - the only girl
_Second wife - Lady Sarin of the house of Aremstrong
Lords of his counsel
_Lord Norris Ritanion - called Norris One-Handed, Lord of sword's Nepp, Warden of the North, King's Sword
_Lord Thailus - called the Black Hat, the Master of the law
Lord Huntly Lanell calles Lord of Words_

Union Minister
_Lord Clyve - called the sly fox, the blind man of the court, the Master of coin
_Rylord Grassin - Grand Master
_Lord Eric Ritanion - called the Sword of Death, the master of the ship
_Mid Sir Alest Trini - Lord Commander of the King's Guard
His royal court
_Lady Maryng - the great seer
_Kydi - called low brain man, King Clown
_Sir Guster Oss - called the sword of moving, the executioner
_Sir Nixen Adiss - Commander of Star City Guards
_Ellyard - in charge of the court library
_Sir Ivon Vine - Master of martial arts
King's guards
_Mid Sir Alest Trini - Lord Commander of the King's Guard
_Sir Thomas Neel
_Sir Durand Ferron
_Sir Gram Evert
_Sir Garry Heller

_Sir Dalles Faber
_Sir Marly Hayes

House Evengers

Our is Revenge

The house of Evengers came into being tow centuries before the sword and leaf battle.
The story of Malcom
Malcom was the servant, guard and companion of a wealthy merchant named Kang who lived in the land west of Hallstreet. At that time, a mercenary named Tairan was hired by an unknown person to secretly kill businessman Kang. Malcom found out about the issue but did not inform the businessman Kang. In order to save his life, Malcom went on a business trip in his place. He was sitting in his litter when a group led by Tairan attacked their convoy. They thought that Kang was inside the litter, so they shot with fire arrows. Meanwhile, Malcom lost his life to keep businessman Kang alive. His son searched all over the world to kill the mercenary to avenge his father's blood and finally found him. Merchant

Kang gave his son land and new titles for Malcom's sacrifice. He founded the Evengers as a reminder that he avenged his father.
During the rule of King Alvess VII of Highwill had a war with the house of Azberns which lasted for 27 days, and finally the house of Azberns conquered the Castle of Two Bloods. The remaining Evengers migrated to Poorvios and lost everything.
The flag of the house of Evengers has two bloody eyes on a black background.
_Robert Evengers - called Lord of Nowhere, a porter worker in Poorvios
_His wife - Lady Billy, is the cook of the guest house
Their children
_Malcom - the only son, called the last Evenger
_Marian - the only daughter, called the Blood Dragon

House Retigan

The phoenix is released

Silver hair and brave
The fifth exceptional son of Olyns the Conqueror - Arolian Ness Retigan - called the Bright Phoenix
His mother died while giving birth to him. Olyns the conqueror took his last child in his arms and looked at him. His hair was pure silver. The born child did not move, did not breathe and his eyes were closed. It was as if he had been born dead. Olyns the Conqueror could not bear the pain of losing his wife and his stillborn son. Instead of burying his son, he took him to the top of a mountain in a phoenix nest and left him there. After Olyns the Conqueror left, the Phoenix approached him. The boy started to cry, opened his eyes and looked at the phoenix. A long time passed when the boy was raised by a phoenix. When he reached a young age, he rode a phoenix

back to the twelve stars one night. With the light of the phoenix, it lit up Star City like middle white. Olyns the Conqueror was overjoyed at the return of his last son.
Arolian Ness Retigan went to where he grew up and built the tallest castle in Vach with the help of a phoenix. His father made him the defender of Whiteel.
Retigan's flag is a white phoenix on a black background.
_Egan Retigan – Lord of Phoenortalix, Defender of Whiteel
_His wife - Lady Mealona, is his cousin
Their children
_Arolian - the first son, called the Dark Phoenix, no one knows what happened to his father after he rebelled.
_Immy - the eldest daughter
_Argan - the second son, heir of Phoenoratalix
_Celins - the last child, called the Sleeping Beauty
His brothers and sisters
-Valda - his older sister
_Her husband - Lord James Starword
Their children

_Jalen - Eldest Son, Heir of the Storm Islands
_Nadia - the only daughter
_Jeran - the younger son
-Nerys - his younger sister
_Her husband - Lord Dydalus Warrin
Their children
_Max - the young son, heir of the Warwin
_Pamelyn - little girl
-Deagan - his brother
_His wife - Tamora from the house of Starword
Their child
_Ewan - is the only child
-Rowlins - his younger brother, has been exiled to Poorvios.

House Sysaiden

Marine Blood , Our Blood

The sea kings who ruled the Snake Islands for thousands of years. In ancient times, it is said that merchant ships were destroyed by the two-headed snakes of Saiden when they entered the stormy sea of the Snake Islands. Their legends say that Terasai the Great went into the stormy sea and tamed the first two-headed serpent of Saiden. After that, the house of Sysaiden is the only family that can release the two-headed snakes of Sysaiden. They have marine blood because their children go into the sea from childhood to be raised with the two-headed snakes of Saiden so that they can rule them in the future. In their ancient books, it is stated that their greatest conquest of the country reached near the land of Ventos.

During the conquests of Olyns the Conqueror, when Alvess Vent Highwill came to the Isles to

unite them with himself, he agreed to marry the daughter of Lord Sysaiden.
The flag of the house of Sysaiden is two head snake of Saiden on a white background.
_Saron Sysaiden - Lord of Snake Islands, The Liberator of Saiden, called the Lord of Marriage, the bannermen of the house of Retigan
His wives
-His first wife - Lady Katie from the house of Garth
Their children
_Chris - the first son, called Red Snake, the heir of Snake Islands
_Mark - the second son, called the double snake
_Alex - the third son, called the Snake eyed boy
_Ashley - the eldest daughter
_Alicia - the little girl
-His second wife - Romy from the house of Tigger
Their children
_Anna - the first daughter
_Betsy - the second daughter
-His third wife - Emily, the daughter of a stable owner

Their children
_The first snake - the first son
_The second snake - the second son
_The third snake - the third son
_The fourth snake - the fourth son
-His fourth wife - Rose, his servant
Their children
_Julia - the first daughter
_Tess - the second daughter
_no name - called the bastard snake
-His fifth wife - Moira from nowhere
Their children
_The first nowhere snake - The first son
_The second nowhere snake - The second son
_The third nowhere snake - The third son
_The fourth nowhere snake - The fourth son
_A female snake - a girl
-His sixth wife - an unnamed woman
Their children
_The fifth snake - the first son
_The sixth snake - the last snake
-His seventh wife - Melissa, a fugitive girl

House Talesky

Strong like Talesky

Red hair and lucky
The second exceptional son of Olyns the Conqueror - Squilen Ness Talesky - called the Golden Boy - the lucky man
His father had given him a castle among the eastern rocks; the worst castle whose stones were melted by the constant heat of the sun like hot iron. Even in the coldest days of winter in the eastern land, the sun ruled where the heat ruled. He showed his disagreements with his father's decision, but Olyns the Conqueror had told him that this is your destiny. He had to go there and protect that castle for his father. A few months after living in the castle, an earthquake occurred that caused the castle to be destroyed. When they wanted to collect the ruins of the castle and rebuild it, they noticed the gold mine on which the castle was built. When they mined the gold

under the castle, the weather in the eastern land also improved compared to other places in the Vach. Squilen Ness Talesky made the whole new castle out of gold.
During the rule of Reagan II Highwill was able to take the guardianship of the East from the house of Mummy.
The flag of the house of Talesky is a bull with golden horns on a gray background.
_Osryn Talesky - called the Godfather, Lord of Golden Horn, Warden of the East
-His first wife - Lady Themis of the house of Talesky, is his cousin
Their child
_Mid sairion - called The Young King, in the Vangardian prison in Poorvios
-His second wife - Lady Harolyn of the house of Wikais
Their children are called the golden boys
_Kyvern - called the New Horn, heir of Golden Horn
_Reantios - the second golden son
_Luckryn - called the last chance, the third golden boy

Brothers and sisters
-Ravinia - the older sister, died at the age of two months.
-Grant - his older brother, died at the age of one month.
-Rory - his older brother, drowned in the sea.
-Regina - his younger sister
_Her husband - Lord Frik Aller
-Runyon - his brother
_His wife - Lady Vlasta from the house of Yeal
Their children
_Ovia - the eldest daughter
_Viviana - the second daughter
_Theron - the only son
-Sir Dyern - his younger brother

House Mummy

The Revenant

It is stated in historical documents that they are the oldest house in Vach, dating back 3000 years. During the period of the stone kings, seven people were killed by a cruel king who ordered them to be buried alive in the grave so that they would die in this state of suffering. After three days, when they opened the graves, they found that one of them, whose name was Leo, had survived, and the cruel king was angry because he came out of the grave alive, and issued a new order. He ordered his soldiers to cover him all over with a white cloth; Even this cloth was tied around his face, but one of his nostrils was left open so that he could hardly breathe. They put him in a wooden coffin and put creatures called black ants in it and put the coffin in public. The king planned to open the coffin after three days to show the people what happened to him, but the

coffin was stolen by an unknown group a few hours after it was placed in public. When that unknown group opened the coffin, they were surprised. The black ants had gone inside Leo's body and removed as much of his skin as possible. Leo survived, but there was nothing left of him but bones. He became the leader of that unknown group and named the group the Revenant and they wanted to revolt against the king. Their uprising initially failed. In one of the wars Leo was killed and his successor Thomas was able to overthrow the kingdom. After the victory of the Mummy dynasty, it was created.
The house of Mummy during the time of Olyns the Conqueror put his soldiers alive as a Mummy along with black ants in the coffin and after their death they opened the coffin and showed them the horrible shape of the corpse to make them afraid. Olyns the Conqueror wanted to send Aremlyn Midnyter to conquer the castle of Anti first, but he was poisoned by them. Daitrios Hall Ritanion, with the plan he had drawn up, took their castle from the inside with the least bloodshed for Olyns the Conqueror. Lord Frank

Mummy bowed his knee to Olyns the Conqueror and Aremlyn Midnyter married her daughter.
The flag of the house of Mummy is a Mummified man inside an open coffin on a blue background.
_Jake Mummy - Lord of Anti first, of the returned generation, the bannermen of the house of Talesky
-His first wife - Lady Margo of house of Sorses
Their children
_Benjamin - called dry Mummy - heir of Anti first
_Aya - wild girl
-His second wife - Lady Joanna from the house of Corvo
Their children
_Lukas
_Felix
_Kryg - called the baby Mummy
His brothers and sisters
-His young brother – Saiblack, has been called the Mummy's child
_His wife - Lady Silvia from the house of Corvo
Their child
_Midsor - an incomplete child

-His little brother - Nathan, called the White Mummy
-His older sister - Rinko - called the dead bride
_Her husband - Lord Jamie Hillar

House Rking

We build , We live , We rule

The seven gates of Hiti
Regarding the birth of Regulus Rking, historical commentators have said that he was born in the golden soil and spent his youth there. When he migrates to the city of gates with his family; he accidentally gets lost in the city. In order to find his family, he accidentally opens one of the gates of Hiti, which had not been opened by anyone until then. That gate opened to the forest land, where House of Azberns ruled, and Regulus went where he had never been before. Regulus also managed to open the gates leading to Star City and Ventos. His family was able to manage these gates and allow people to pass through these gates, either for immigration or for business. And from this they became a rich family. It is said that except for the city gates, there are seven other gates in the city, which are known as Hiti gates,

of which only two gates are open until now. The first gate opens to Star City and the second to the forest land ruled by the house of Rking. At the time of the first heir, the gate leading to Exara City was open, but now it is closed, and no one can open it. One of the gates has been opened by Aremlyn Midnyter, and no one knows where it opens. The seventh and last gate was opened by Olyns the conqueror, according to him, that gate opens to the final day. And a gate that no one has yet opened is prophesied to be opened by a woman.

Making Paradise

Regulus wanted to build the golden soil, where he was born, by researching the soils of other lands. He collected soil from all regions of the world and compared and tested it with golden soil so that he could build its root and using it, a land not as big as an island; rather, build a vast land and call it paradise. It is said that the act of building land on the sea is divided into four parts, and Regulus managed to build a stable land on the sea for the fourth time, which will not be destroyed even after the passage of centuries.

The first attempt

He merged all the soil collected from other lands with the golden soil. He made a substance called Soylor, which strengthened the lower layers of the soil on water. He poured this substance on the sea to prepare the sea water for the drying process and after a few months, he threw the mixed soil into the sea, but nothing had happened.

Second attempt

For the second time, he wanted to do this operation when there was a storm and thunder and lightning. He waited until there was a thunderstorm before he could do this. At the promised time, when they poured the soil on the sea water, a thunderbolt hit it, and the small amount of land it wanted to create in the beginning, the land was created for a few minutes, but the soil created after the end of the storm and Thunder and lightning turned into powder and went to the depths of the sea.

Third attempt

Again, by researching different soils and seas, he concluded that not every soil is effective on every sea. And he must find the right soil, the right sea,

and the right time for the drying operation to be able to carry out the drying operation. According to his experiments and research, he found the suitable sea and had calculated that he should pour it on the sea water every year on the days when the substance of soylor can have the best effect. And after three years, he poured the soil he made again on the sea. This soil was combined with the soylor substance that was mixed with sea water, and the land was made the size of an island. Regulus and his men went to the prepared island. After a few hours of walking on the soil of the island, they realized that the soil of the island pulls a person into it like a swamp so that they had no escape route and Regulus lost many his people and the rest managed to escape from there and go into the boat. This island became known as the man-eating island.

Fourth attempt

For the fourth time, Regulus Rking first poured the desired soil on the sea. These soils took root in the depths of the sea and after a year passed, they placed the soylor material in special jars that had heat inside. They threw all the glass into the sea

and thousands of people shot fire arrows in the middle white towards the sea full of glass, which made a loud sound like the sound of a bell after the fire arrows hit the glass. When the sound was played, a dust was created that blocked the view of others in that direction. After the dust was over, a vast and solid land like other lands was made, and the first person to step on this land was Regulus. When he stepped on this prepared land, he felt that he had really made Paradise.
The flag of the house of Rking is a middle white star on a brown background.
1_30
King Regulus I - The First King of Paradise - called the Golden Man - Son of the Gates
He was able to bring many people to Paradise in fourteen years and provide them with a comfortable life. During his rule, he built the first city in the heart of Paradise and named it middle white and made it the capital.
30_37
King Hary I - the first son of King Regulus I - called the White Boy
He died by eating the substance of Soylor.

37_44
King Haiward I - third son of King Regulus I - Island Maker - called the Island King
King Haiward made an island with the advanced material of Soylor, which he named the Island of Wishes.
44_72
King Tollus I - son of King Haiward I - King of Battle
During the time of King Tollus I, a substance called soylorneg was found, which did the opposite of drying. In his will, Regulus had advised his children not to use this substance in any way, which would cause it to harm the soil of other regions. The king of Tollus, who had entered a war with the house of Ritanion, destroyed the big guard tower that the Ritanion soldiers were inside by using soylorneg material, and that tower was destroyed; So that under that tower, water came out from the lower layers of the earth, and later that area became known as the guard water.
Civil War
After the conflict with the house of Ritanion,

Paradise was divided into two parts, eastern and western, and a civil war broke out in it. The house of Rking was on the verge of destruction during the rule of Vegan I of Highwill.

A second son of golden soil

Serlogos Rking, like his ancestor Regulus, was born in golden soil; But with the difference that he had opened his eyes in the middle white. When he reached his youth, he came to the Eastern Paradise where the house of Rking ruled. By uniting the Eastern and Western Paradises after 170 years, he reunited the Land of Paradise. People gave him the title Serlogos the Conqueror.

1_27

King Serlogos I - Conqueror of the Eastern and Western Paradises - called Serlogos the Conqueror - Second Son

During his rule, he made the golden throne.

27_67

King Regulus II - the only son of King Serlogos I - called the King of the Golden Eye

He has the longest rule in the history of the Rking dynasty. At the time of his death, he had lost all his children and left the golden throne to his

grandson.
67_88
King Loko I - grandson of King Regulus II - called the fat king
He was so fat that he sat all the time and rarely walked. He was always moved on a stretcher.
88
King Jorel I - Second son of King Loko I
The king of the third men and the conqueror of the eastern and western Paradise
Guardian of Silverown
The middle white star
Warden of the gates
And the king is entitled to the golden throne
_His wife - Queen Angelina from the house of Frasica, Black Queen
Their children
_Prince Paul - called the third son, was born in the golden soil, the heir to the golden throne
_Prince Regulus - second son
_Princess Irma - is engaged to her cousin Igor
_Princess Imotry - the last child
His brothers and sisters
-His older brother - Jonathan, is paralyzed, called

strange, the voice of the king
_His wife - Lady Zenobia from the feather land
Their children
_Igor - the first son, is engaged to his cousin Irma
_Elan - the second son, called son of the soil
-His younger brother - Ser Jason, is his guardian knight
-His younger sister - Jennifer
_Her husband - Lord Colin Worth
Their children
_Norman - the first son, heir to worth men
_Keegan - the second son
His white lords
_Lord Jonathan Rking - The voice of the king
_Lord Wright - called the captain of ships, Master of the ship
_Lord Adeps Zed - called Dreamy Lord, Master of gold and treasury of the court
_Lord Ataylor Mah - Lord of Battle, called Sir Ataylor the Silent
_Lord Gray - Lord of bread, in charge of food and agricultural products
_Lord Dustin Weeks - Ambassador of the Court to the Union

_Lord Patrick Lewis - Lord of Soil, responsible for soil maintenance

House Stone

We are not dependent

Unknown heir
Antonios was one of the slave laborers of King Symos, who lived in the gold mine in Poorvios alongside the gladiators. King made him a companion and servant of the gladiator of Proksimos. Proksimos was a gladiator who fought for King Symos in the fighting pit. He brings him many honors. When he loses in the fight, he beats Antonios to death so that his anger subsides. Antonios learned the way of fighting gladiators by watching them fight and trained secretly at night to become a gladiator one day for his freedom. One night, Proksimos notices his training, and he becomes very angry. To punish him, he cuts off his right hand. Antonios no longer became disappointed and depressed. He had no more motivation to live. He asks for a fight to the death between him and Proksimos.

King Symos and Proksimos agreed to his request. On the day of the fight, all the gladiators and slaves came to the stands to watch the death of poor Antonios. Antonios had brought his severed hand and tied it behind his back with a rope. When the fight began, everyone knew that Antonios had no chance of winning; So they sat quietly on the benches and wanted Proksimos to give him a painless death. During the fight, Antonios only attacked and Proksimos defended with complete reluctance; it's like he's fighting a dead training opponent. When Proksimos got bored, he struck Antonios' left hand hard with his sword, causing his left hand to be cut off. Antonios let out a cry and fell to his knees in despair. Proksimos stood over him; So that Antonios could no longer see the light of the sun. Antonios closed his eyes and whispered. Proksimos was about to raise his sword and make the final beat but the darkness of the middle white hid everything. All the spectators expected that Antonios' head would be cut off after the darkness of the middle white but when the middle white dawned, the tide was turned. Proksimos the

gladiator was kneeling in front of the slave Antonios with his hands cut off. Antonios' severed hands were reattached as on the first day. It was as if it had not been interrupted at all. The Infinity Sword was in his right hand. He raised the sword and cut off the head of Proksimos. Spectators all got up from their benches and looked at him.

First day

According to Antonios himself, he was only allowed to use the power of the Infinity Sword for three days. On the first day, using the power of the Infinity Sword, he freed all the slaves and killed the gladiators and corrupt kings.

Second day

To make a better world for the slaves, he brought them to the Spirit Islands and settled them and made stone shelters for them.

Third day

On the third and the last day, he destroyed the disease that had taken root in the world.

Antonios founded the Stone House and announced the Infinity Sword, which was said to have been frozen after the third day, to the rest as the symbol of the King of the Spirit Islands,

naming it the Middle white Sword.
The House of Stone flag is a bloody human skull on a silver background.
1_14
King Antonios I - called Heir Unknown - First Slave Gladiator - Protector of the Infinity Sword - Three Day Man
According to the first heir, Olyns the Conqueror says that there are many heirs to the Infinity Sword that are unknown and have limitations to use the Infinity Sword. But there are three people known to be the heirs of the Infinity Sword.
14_50
King Senados I - the second son of King Antonios I - called the Skull King
When the king reached Senados I, the son of the unknown heir, he made a throne from the skulls of his enemies and changed the name of the Spirit Islands to the Skull Islands.
50_72
King Vesios I - masked son of King Senados I - called the Faceless Man
King Vesios I is said to have always worn a golden mask on his face and no one had seen his

face.
72_90
King Veros I - the chosen son of King Vesios I - called the Black Skull
He succeeded in winning the contests that his father left for succession.
90_120
King Antonios II - the only son of King Veros I - called the cunning king
He wanted to rule until the last moment of survival and old age, when he was killed by his son.
120
King Sealyond I - the first son of King Antonios II - called the Genocide
The king of chosen and working men
Warden of the seas, ships, islands
Protector of the second day
The middle white sword holder
And the rightful king of the skull throne
_His wife - Queen Anissa, is his cousin
Their children
_Prince Tom - died at the age of 3 due to illness.
_Prince Vesios - died of suffocation at the age of 1.

_Prince Antonios was killed by his father.
His brothers
-His half-brother - Constantine, called the runaway prince
_His wife - Lady Ryna of the house of Black stone
Their only child
_Orylas - their only daughter
-His blood brother - Veros, called the White Skull
_His wife - Lady Sofia from the house of Gara
Their only child
_Kaytos - is a 7-year-old child
Lords of the second day
_Lord MR - called Lord Two Letters, Lord of ship management
_Lord Sun - Lord of marine management
_Lord Ator Arrios - called the first worker, Lord of the Workers
_Lord Symon Dark - called Dark Shadow, Lord of the Union
_Lord Nedved Day - Lord of the management of the islands
_Lord Daik - called Thousand Eyes, Lord News

THE THIRD SON

Valerios Ness Eragon

The third exceptional son of Olyns the Conqueror and the most famous - Valerios Ness Eragon - called the first and last Dragon Rider of the Vach - bringer of winter in the middle white - the liberator of Fice - the sword of the seven Kingdoms.
Valerios Ness Eragon is called the first and last dragon rider of the Vach. He was born in Vangardian prison. As a child, according to his instincts that told him something was hidden in the underground, he digged 15 feet into the underground of the Vangardian prison with his bare hands, when he came across a strange thing that looked like a stone. He touched it, which made something change in him. He immediately got out of the hole he had dug and closed it. After that incident, he always felt something strange inside him. He felt hot in winter and cold in

summer. Heat and cold were mixed in him and strangely appeared in his body during the seasons. When he got young, he woke up one day and opened his eyes. He felt that he had just been born; so that he had no memory of his past. It was as if he has lived all these years in the world of the first ice age. He had told others about this, but no one believed him, and they said he was crazy. After months passed, he continued his normal life.

During his father's absence, Daitrios Hall Ritanion ruled as the second conqueror, rebelling against his rule and wanting to reclaim his father's throne. During the night of his rebellion, he returned to Twelve Stars of his father. He exiled him to Vangardian prison for treason. In the Vangardian prison, he tried to get out, but he had to reach the last floor. Every floor he reached, he fought with a powerful warrior to defeat him and be able to reach a higher floor. Each floor had fighters who fought with a special style that made his work difficult. He reached the ninth floor; he had taken a deep wound during the fight and could not continue. His opponent threw him

down from there. When he fell from the surface of the ground, a wind came out of it, which gently landed him on the ground. Suddenly, the surface of Vangardian prison began to crack, and moments after he fell to the ground, two full-grown dragons emerged. They flew in the sky and made a loud cry that scared all the prisoners including the guards. Two mature dragons destroyed the walls of the prison with their icy and fiery breaths. There was no longer a wall to keep the prisoners inside. All the prisoners escaped, Valerios was the last. After being released from prison, Valerios searched for dragons throughout Poorvios. In order to find the dragons, he had to do different things, the last of which was fighting for the city that he had to pass through. When he found the dragons, he went towards them. He had just realized that the stone he had touched in his childhood was a dragon egg. Approaching them, he tried to ride one of them. In the beginning, this was very difficult, but the passage of time solved this issue. The dragons had become kind to him and knew he was their true rider. He rode one of them and

returned to his fatherland. His father was taken to the sky by the celestials. Teaming up with his brothers to free his father, he went to sky, and they freed their father. In the epic battle called the Battle of Time, they defeated the celestials in which he had played a very important role. Olyns the Conqueror, pardoned him for his services in battle and restored him to all his titles. With the dragons around the seven kingdoms, he made a great ice wall, he himself stood in the center and hit the ground with his sword, and the ice wall turned into fire. People called him the sword of seven kingdoms. Valerios Ness Eragon was finally killed in the Battle of Life.

THE FIRST SON

Ryson Ness Eyelis

The first exceptional son of Olyns the Conqueror - Ryson Ness Eyelis - called the Dreamer - the cleverest son of Olyns the Conqueror - the Conqueror Vach at night
He used to look at someone else's eyes with his eyes; from his point of view, he saw, heard, spoke, felt, understood and most importantly acted. His abilities were much stronger and more effective than his brothers. He had an invisible bird that flew wherever he wanted and could see him there. His most important power was that he could control people's sleep at night; to change the dreams that others saw and to replace those dreams that he wanted or to keep people asleep for a long time. At night when his father slept, he sat on the Infinity Throne and ruled the 12 kingdoms of the Vach in place of his father. If he was immersed in dreaming a lot; he could no

longer return to the original world and would be trapped in an eternal dream forever.
In the battle of his life, he had given the greatest help to his brothers. He controlled the eyes of thousands of two-faced dead and used them against themselves, until finally the eye king surprised him forever.

Calendar

This calendar was recreated by Robert Morgan. In this calendar, most of the events of the past have been removed and the events of the last few centuries have been added to it. This calendar is different from the old calendar and important events may not be mentioned.

Summer

The first month of **Fionest**

The first tweek

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

1st to 7th day - the first seven days of the year of the golden rule of Olyns the conqueror - official holiday

8

The day of peace between Sky and earth - ending the battle of time
9
Formation of Vach and Paradise Union
10
The formation of the Vach Union and the Skull Islands
11
12
11th and 12th day - the day of silence
The second tweek
1
Midnyter's Day - This title was given posthumously by Reagan Retigan-Highwill to his half-brother Rolyn Retigan after Aremlyn Midnyter known as the Killing Knight. On his occasion, Midnyter competitions are held in Whiteel every 7 years, and during the last few centuries, few people were able to become Midnyters. A person who becomes a Midnyter can command all the knights in the world, even the knights of the king's guard.
2
knight's day

3
soldier's day
4
5
6
The sixth day - the end of the revolution and the kingdom of Richard Azberns
7
8
8th day - the day of the Law of Lym, which was enacted by Daitrios Hall Ritanion, which means the separation of territory.
9
10
11
The 11th day - the day of Artish, the greatest poet of recent centuries - the day of poetry
12
Dragon's birthday for the first time in history
The second month of **Setwend**
The first tweek
1
2
3

4
5
6
The sixth day - the day of friendship
7
8
9
10
Day 10 - The Day of Formation of People's Army by Olyns the Conqueror - Olyns the Conqueror had created a secret army all over the world to live in secret among the people and show themselves when an important event happened. This army was destroyed in the battle of life and many of its effects are seen in Poorvios.
11
12
The second tweek
1
2
The second day - the day of defense of the innocent
3
4

The fourth day - the day of the pen
5
6
7
The seventh day - the day of the king's guards
8
9
10
11
12
The third month of **Corpio**
The first tweek
1
2
The second day - the day of commemoration of the Great Rylord Dario - the one who was the first Rylord and chose the title of Rylord for the great masters.
3
Loyalty Day
4
5
The fifth day - iron day
6

7
8
The eighth day- the night of the battle of life - when the two-faced walkers came to the Civilized Vach.
9
10
11
11th day - Salt Day
12
The second tweek
1
Nature and forest day
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12

The fourth month – **Dellz**
The first tweek
1
2
3
4
The fourth day - the day of the formation of Ritwill group
5
One-on-one battle day
6
7
8
The eighth day - the day of the battle with Paradise
9
10
11
11th day - sea day
12
The second tweek
1
2
3

4
5
The fifth day - the day of books and reading
6
7
8
8th day - The day the Skyglass of the Five Kingdoms Palace was built
9
10
11
12
The fifth month of **Reen**
The first tweek
1
2
3
The third day - the day of honor
4
5
6
7
The seventh day - Farmer's Day
8

9
10
11
The 11th day is the day of commemoration of Sir Mack Monray, the greatest commander of recent centuries
12
The second tweek
1
2
3
The third day - the day of the beginning of the revolution and the suicide of King Iryn VI Highwill
4
5
6
5th and 6th day - In ancient times, it was rumored that the world was silent during these two days; so that no living creature could speak or make a sound of its own.
7
8
9

10
The 10th day is the birthday of King Derell III, the king of judgment. It is an official holiday
11
Day Light Night - On the night Arolian Ness returned, he kept the whole night lit with the light of the phoenix.
12
The sixth month - **Napdis**
The first tweek
1
2
3
4
5
6
The sixth day - the day of destroying the walls of Star City
7
8
9
10
11
12

The second tweek
1
The day of breaking swords
2
3
The third day - the day of wealth
4
5
6
Sixth day - long day
7
8
8th day - the day of the suspicious death of Daitrios Hall Ritanion
9
The Day of the Making of the Lords of Counsel by Daitrios Hall Ritanion
10
11
12
The seventh month of **Abbit**
The first tweek
1
friendship message day

2
Agreement day 17- According to this agreement written between the five kingdoms, every 17 years one of the sons of the five royal houses should become the protector of the king.
3
4
5
6
7
The seventh day - the day of defending the house
8
9
10
The 10th day - the day of love - the day of LV
11
12
The second tweek
1
2
3
4
5
6

7
8
9
9th day - lucky day - the birthday of Squilen Ness
10
11
12
The twelfth day - the second midday - on this day, the middle white turns red, and it is called the red midday or the second midday.
The third tweek
1
The day of the discovery of the Vach by Troylo Ritanion
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
The ninth day - the day of the infinity throne
10

11
12
WINTER
The eighth month of **Ragon**
The first tweek
1
The birthday of the dragon in a story
2
fish day
3
4
Day 4 - The day Prince Rayce was publicly executed for treason by his father
5
6
The sixth day - the day of the outbreak of C.Coynbes disease
7
day of time
8
9
10
The 10th day - the coronation day of the young king Mid Sairion Talesky

11
12
12th day - clean air day
The second tweek
1
2
3
The third day - the day of the golden cow - the day of the foundation of the Talesky dynasty
4
5
6
The sixth day - the day of the five kingdoms - official holiday
7
8
8th day - World Travel Day
9
10
11
11th day - the longest night of the year, which is known as Yoty night.
12
The ninth month of **Sylion**

The first tweek

1

2

The second day - the longest darkness of the middle white, which is a third of the middle white and happens every hundred years, which causes everyone to panic.

3

4

Day 4 - Dreaming Day - Ryson Ness's birthday

5

Lion's day - the day of announcement of the house of Azberns

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

The twelfth day: the king ordered the brutal murder of Enara Azberns and the next day she was burned in the ice street.

The second tweek

1
2
The second day - the day of the discovery of the lands of Vach by Troylo Ritanion in a narrative
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
The tenth month of **Mellber**
The first tweek
1
World Wrestling Day
2
3
4
5
Day 5 - The rumor of the death of John Highwill, the grandson of King Iryn VI

6
7
8
9
Ninth day - Position day
10
11
12
The twelfth day - brother's day - the day of the rule of brothers
The second tweek
1
2
3
The third day - T's rainy day
4
5
6
7
The seventh day - the day of the Mountain of conqueror
8
9
10

10th day - the longest middle white
11
12
The 11th month - **Hyly**
The first tweek
1
The day Paradise was created by Regulus Rking - King Reagan II of Highwill declared all Vach a public holiday and people went to Paradise to visit - Public holiday
2
3
4
The fourth day - the day of children and teenagers
5
6
7
The seventh day - the day of the peace of Olyns the conqueror with the enemies
8
9
10
The tenth day - the day of the Phoenix - the

founding day of the house of Retigan
11
The day 40 children disappeared
12
The second tweek
1
2
3
The third day - the day of screams - one of the days of the revolution when the capital was filled with screams and shouts.
4
5
6
7
8
The 8th day - the day of the Sword's King, the second most powerful person in the Five Kingdoms
9
10
10th day - International Work Day
11
12

World Justice Day - Nepp Ritanion Day
The twelfth month of **Phant**
The first tweek
1
The birthday of Olyns the Conqueror, the second heir to the Infinity Sword
2
3
The third day - the day of leaves - the birthday of the house of Highwill
4
5
The fifth day - King's Day - Father's Day
6
7
8
9
10
10th day - the day of the first star shield of the brave Myllen
11
Star Wars Day
12
The second tweek

1
2
The second day - the day of freeing the world from the two-faced walkers by Olyns the conqueror - official holiday
3
4
5
The fifth day - the day of commemoration of Regulus Rking
6
7
The seventh day - the day of struggle against the slavery system
8
9
9th day - baby's day
10
11
12
Queen's Day - Mother's Day
The 13th month of **Um**
The first tweek
1

2
3
3rd day - the day of the rule of Daitrios Hall Ritanion as the second conqueror and the beginning of the absence of Olyns the Conqueror
4
5
6
6th day - Ryedhorror's terror day
7
8
8th day - World Day of Light
9
10
11
The 11th day - the day of the discovery of the Vach by Troylo Ritanion according to the third narration
12
The second tweek
1
On this day, Olyns the Conqueror picked up the Infinity Sword and the sky was filled with purple stars. On this day, it is said that it is better not to

fight.
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
The eighth day - teacher's day
9
10
A day of cold winds
11
12
The fourteenth and last month of winter - **PowRace**
The first tweek
1
White day - good day
2
3
4
Day 4: The arrival of the first earthquake in the north, which killed countless innocent people.

5
6
7
The seventh day - the land day
8
Flag Day and Pride
9
10
11
12
The second tweek
1
2
3
4
5
The fifth day - the day of commemoration of Nepp Ritanion
6
7
8
9
9th day - the day of hearing the sound from the green well

10
11
12
The third tweak
1
A battle with the shadows that goes back to the time before Olyns the conqueror.
2
Commemoration day of Samron who wrote the first Vach calendar.
3
4
5
6
The sixth day - the day of the killing of three legends of history (Olyns the Conqueror and his two exceptional sons) - official holiday
7
8
Day 8: Mid Sairion Talesky's escape from the capital
9
10
Day of the Sword - the birth of the house of

Ritanion
11
World Peace Day - official holiday
12
The last day of the year is known as the final day of the year, which may be the last day of the year - official holiday

Book 2

It continues in "**I am the final day**"

- **Eric Ritanion**

I am the final day.

- **Enaya Azberns**

We are unique.

- **Tomelryos the Worker**

We do not work in the middle white.

Future

A story about the future of the final day, narrated by the first heir.

A picture of the future

When the last heir returns to rescue Castle, the three great walls around the castle, whose distances are so large that they reach a full day, are built by the three true heirs of the Infinity Sword. The first wall is guarded by Olyns the conqueror, and his extraordinary children and an army defeated in the Battle of Life. Daitrios comes to the castle to ally with the last heir to advise him against the enemy. The first hero losing his life is Olyns the conqueror. When Olyns the conqueror dies, everyone stops fighting, and on the third day of the final day there is no war to honor Olyns the Conqueror.

Story

- **The first story**

The story begins 21 years after the revolution. King Richard Azberns, called the Old King, decides to pass the throne to his nephew, son-in-law and heir, Henry. John Highwill, called the last Highwill after his grandfather's suicide, fled to Ventos where the house of Highwill began their rule, now sworn to the five kingdoms of Richard Azberns as Lord of Irence. After ruling in winter, Mid sairion Talesky called the Young King was defeated by the armies of Ritanion and Azberns and fled the capital and was taken to the Vangardian prison by the order of Osryn Talesky called the Godfather.

- **The second story**

It is about the character of Tomelryos the worker who comes to the Skull Islands with his brother to work. The Skull Islands are ruled by the House of Stone, whose king is known as the Genocide.

Contact with Author

- **Instagram: @mr.theworker7**
- **Gmail: tomtheworker9@gmail.com**

ETERNAL RULE

#The_Final_Day_Is_Coming

#We_Do_Not_Work_In_The_Middle_White

#I_Am_The_Final_Day

2023 OCTOBER